

THE
HISTORY
OF THE
ADVENTURES
OF

JOSEPH ANDREWS,

And his FRIEND

Mr. *ABRAHAM ADAMS.*

Written in Imitation of

The *Manner* of CERVANTES,
Author of *Don Quixote.*

By HENRY FIELDING, Esquire.

Illustrated with CUTS.

The FOURTH EDITION, revised and corrected.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

L O N D O N :

Printed for A. MILLAR, opposite to *Katharine*
Street, in the *Strand*. M.DCC.XLIX.

THE
HISTORY

OF THE
ADVENTURES



OF THE

ADVENTURES

OF THE

ADVENTURES

OF THE

ADVENTURES

OF THE

ADVENTURES

OF THE

ADVENTURES

Lady Stanley 1751



THE
CONTENTS
OF
VOLUME I.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

O*F writing Lives in general, and particularly
of Pamela ; with a Word by the bye of
Colley Cibber and others.* Page 1

CHAP. II.

*Of Mr. Joseph Andrews his Birth, Parentage,
Education, and great Endowments, with a Word
or two concerning Ancestors.* 4

CHAP. III.

*Of Mr. Abraham Adams the Curate, Mrs. Slip-
slop the Chambermaid, and others.* 7

CHAP. IV.

What happened after their Journey to London. 12

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. V.

The Death of Sir Thomas Booby, with the affectionate and mournful Behaviour of his Widow, and the great Purity of Joseph Andrews. 14

CHAP. VI.

How Joseph Andrews writ a Letter to his Sister Pamela. 18

CHAP. VII.

Sayings of wise Men. A Dialogue between the Lady and her Maid, and a Panegyric or rather Satire on the Passion of Love, in the sublime Style. 22

CHAP. VIII.

In which, after some very fine Writing, the History goes on, and relates an Interview between the Lady and Joseph ; where the latter hath set an Example, which we despair of seeing followed by his Sex in this vicious Age. 27

CHAP. IX.

What passed between the Lady and Mrs. Slipslop, in which we prophesy there are some Strokes which every one will not truly comprehend at the first Reading. 33

CHAP. X.

Joseph writes another Letter : His Transactions with Mr. Peter Pounce, &c. with his Departure from Lady Booby. 38

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. XI.

Of several new Matters not expected. 41

CHAP. XII.

Containing many surprizing Adventures which Joseph Andrews met with on the Road, scarce credible to those who have never travelled in a Stage-Coach. 45

CHAP. XIII.

What happened to Joseph during his Sickness at the Inn, with the curious Discourse between him and Mr. Barnabas the Parson of the Parish. 53

CHAP. XIV.

Being very full of Adventures, which succeeded each other at the Inn. 58

CHAP. XV.

Shewing how Mrs. Tow-wouse was a little mollified; and how officious Mr. Barnabas and the Surgeon were to prosecute the Thief: With a Dissertation accounting for their Zeal, and that of many other Persons not mentioned in this History. 68

CHAP. XVI.

The Escape of the Thief. Mr. Adams's Disappointment. The Arrival of two very extraordinary Personages, and the Introduction of Parson Adams to Parson Barnabas. 70

CHAP. XVII.

A pleasant Discourse between the two Parsons and the Bookseller, which was broke off by an unlucky

CONTENTS.

lucky Accident happening in the Inn, which produced a Dialogue between Mrs. Tow-wouse and her Maid of no gentle kind. 82

CHAP. XVIII.

The History of Betty the Chambermaid, and an Account of what occasioned the violent Scene in the preceding Chapter. 89

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

O*F Divisions in Authors.* 94

CHAP. II.

A surprising Instance of Mr. Adams's short Memory, with the unfortunate Consequences which it brought on Joseph. 98

CHAP. III.

The Opinion of two Lawyers concerning the same Gentleman, with Mr. Adams's Enquiry into the Religion of his Host. 104

CHAP. IV.

The History of Leonora, or the Unfortunate Filt. 112

CHAP. V.

A dreadful Quarrel which happened at the Inn where the Company dined, with its bloody Consequences to Mr. Adams. 134

CHAP.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. VI.

Conclusion of the Unfortunate Filt. 145

CHAP. VII.

A very short Chapter, in which Parson Adams went a great Way. 151

CHAP. VIII.

A notable Dissertation by Mr. Abraham Adams; wherein that Gentleman appears in a political Light. 154

CHAP. IX.

In which the Gentleman descants on Bravery and heroic Virtue, till an unlucky Accident puts an end to the Discourse. 159

CHAP. X.

Giving an Account of the strange Catastrophe of the preceding Adventure, which drew poor Adams into fresh Calamities; and who the Woman was who owed the Preservation of her Chastity to his victorious Arm. 166

CHAP. XI.

What happened to them while before the Justice. A Chapter very full of Learning. 172

CHAP. XII.

A very delightful Adventure, as well to the Persons concerned, as to the good-natured Reader. 181

CHAP. XIII.

A Dissertation concerning high People and low People,

CONTENTS.

ple, with Mrs. Slipslop's Departure in no very good Temper of Mind, and the evil Plight in which she left Adams and his Company. 187

CHAP. XIV.

An Interview between Parsons Adams and Parson Trulliber. 195

CHAP. XV.

An Adventure, the Consequence of a new Instance which Parson Adams gave of his Forgetfulness. 204

CHAP. XVI.

A very curious Adventure, in which Mr. Adams gave a much greater Instance of the honest Simplicity of his Heart than of his Experience in the Ways of this World. 208

CHAP. XVII.

A Dialogue between Mr. Abraham Adams and his Host, which by the Disagreement in their Opinions seemed to threaten an unlucky Catastrophe, had it not been timely prevented by the Return of the Lovers. 219

1 MA 66

P R E-



P R E F A C E.

AS it is possible the mere English Reader may have a different Idea of Romance with the Author of these little Volumes ; and may consequently expect a kind of Entertainment not to be found, nor which was even intended, in the following Pages ; it may not be improper to premise a few Words concerning this Kind of Writing, which I do not remember to have seen hitherto attempted in our Language.

The EPIC, as well as the DRAMA, is divided into Tragedy and Comedy. HOMER, who was the Father of this Species of Poetry, gave us a Pattern of both these, tho' that of the latter kind is entirely lost ; which Aristotle tells us, bore the same Relation to Comedy which his Iliad bears to Tragedy. And perhaps, that we have no more Instances of it among the Writers of Antiquity, is owing to the Loss of this great Pattern, which, had it survived,

VOL. I. A vived,

P R E F A C E.

vived, would have found its Imitators equally with the other Poems of this great Original.

And farther, as this Poetry may be Tragic or Comic, I will not scruple to say it may be likewise either in Verse or Prose : For tho' it wants one Particular, which the Critic enumerates in the constituent Parts of an Epic Poem, namely Metre ; yet, when any kind of Writing contains all its other Parts, such as Fable, Action, Characters, Sentiments, and Diction, and is deficient in Metre only ; it seems, I think, reasonable to refer it to the Epic ; at least, as no Critic hath thought proper to range it under any other Head, or to assign it a particular Name to itself.

Thus the Telemachus of the Archbishop of Cambray appears to me of the Epic Kind, as well as the Odyssey of Homer ; indeed, it is much fairer and more reasonable to give it a Name common with that Species from which it differs only in a single Instance, than to confound it with those which it resembles in no other. Such are those voluminous Works commonly called Romances, namely, Clelia, Cleopatra, Astræa, Cassandra, the Grand Cyrus, and innumerable others, which contain, as I apprehend, very little Instruction or Entertainment.

*Now a comic Romance is a comic Epic-Poem in Prose ; differing from Comedy, as the serious Epic
from*

P R E F A C E.

from Tragedy : its *Action* being more extended and comprehensive ; containing a much larger Circle of Incidents, and introducing a greater Variety of Characters. It differs from the serious Romance in its *Fable* and *Action*, in this ; that as in the one these are grave and solemn, so in the other they are light and ridiculous : It differs in its Characters, by introducing Persons of inferior Rank, and consequently, of inferior Manners, whereas the grave Romance sets the highest before us ; lastly, in its Sentiments and Diction ; by preserving the Ludicrous instead of the Sublime. In the Diction, I think, Burlesque itself may be sometimes admitted ; of which many Instances will occur in this Work, as in the Description of the Battles, and some other Places, not necessary to be pointed out to the Classical Reader ; for whose Entertainment those Parodies or Burlesque Imitations are chiefly calculated.

But tho' we have sometimes admitted this in our Diction, we have carefully excluded it from our Sentiments and Characters : for there it is never properly introduced, unless in Writings of the Burlesque Kind, which this is not intended to be. Indeed, no two Species of Writing can differ more widely than the Comic and the Burlesque : for as the latter is ever the Exhibition of what is monstrous and unnatural, and where our Delight, if we examine it, arises from the surprizing Absurdity, as in appropriating the Manners of the highest

P R E F A C E.

the lowest, or è converso ; so in the former, we should ever confine ourselves strictly to Nature, from the just Imitation of which, will flow all the Pleasure we can this way convey to a sensible Reader. And perhaps there is one Reason why a Comic Writer should of all others be the least excused for deviating from Nature, since it may not be always so easy for a serious Poet to meet with the Great and the Admirable ; but Life every where furnishes an accurate Observer with the Ridiculous.

I have hinted this little concerning Burlesque ; because, I have often heard that Name given to Performances which have been truly of the Comic Kind, from the Author's having sometimes admitted it in his Diction only ; which, as it is the Dress of Poetry, doth, like the Dress of Men, establish Characters, (the one of the whole Poem, and the other of the whole Man) in vulgar Opinion, beyond any of their greater Excellencies : But surely, a certain Drollery in Stile, where the Characters and Sentiments are perfectly natural, no more constitutes the Burlesque, than an empty Pomp and Dignity of Words, where every thing else is mean and low, can entitle any Performance to the Appellation of the true Sublime.

And I apprehend, my Lord Shaftesbury's Opinion of mere Burlesque agrees with mine, when he asserts, There is no such Thing to be found in
the

P R E F A C E.

the Writings of the Ancients. *But perhaps, I have less Abhorrence than he professes for it : and that not because I have had some little Success on the Stage this Way ; but rather, as it contributes more to exquisite Mirth and Laughter than any other ; and these are probably more wholesome Physic for the Mind, and conduce better to purge away Spleen, Melancholy and ill Affections than is generally imagined. Nay, I will appeal to common Observation, whether the same Companies are not found more full of Good Humour and Benevolence, after they have been sweetened for two or three Hours with Entertainments of this Kind, than when soured by a Tragedy or a grave Lecture.*

But to illustrate all this by another Science, in which, perhaps, we shall see the Distinction more clearly and plainly : Let us examine the Works of a Comic History-Painter, with those Performances which the Italians call Caricatura ; where we shall find the true Excellence of the former to consist in the exactest copying of Nature ; insomuch, that a judicious Eye instantly rejects any thing outré ; any Liberty which the Painter hath taken with the Features of that Alma Mater.—Whereas in the Caricatura we allow all Licence. Its Aim is to exhibit Monsters not Men ; and all Distortions and Exaggerations whatever are within its proper Province.

P R E F A C E.

Now what *Caricatura* is in *Painting*, *Burlesque* is in *Writing*; and in the same manner the *Comic Writer* and *Painter* correlate to each other. And here I shall observe, that, as in the former the *Painter* seems to have the *Advantage*; so it is in the latter infinitely on the *Side* of the *Writer*: for the *Monstrous* is much easier to paint than describe, and the *Ridiculous* to describe than paint.

And tho' perhaps this latter *Species* doth not in either *Science* so strongly affect and agitate the *Muscles* as the other; yet it will be owned, I believe, that a more rational and useful *Pleasure* arises to us from it. He who should call the *Ingenious Hogarth* a *Burlesque Painter*, would, in my *Opinion*, do him very little *Honour*: for sure it is much easier, much less the *Subject* of *Admiration*, to paint a *Man* with a *Nose*, or any other *Feature* of a preposterous *Size*, or to expose him in some absurd or monstrous *Attitude*, than to express the *Affections* of *Men* on *Canvas*. It hath been thought a vast *Commendation* of a *Painter*, to say his *Figures* seem to breathe; but surely it is a much greater and nobler *Applause*, that they appear to think.

But to return—The *Ridiculous* only, as I have before said, falls within my *Province* in the present *Work*.—Nor will some *Explanation* of this *Word*

P R E F A C E.

be thought impertinent by the Reader, if he considers how wonderfully it hath been mistaken, even by Writers who have profess'd it : for to what but such a Mistake, can we attribute the many Attempts to ridicule the blackest Villainies ; and what is yet worse, the most dreadful Calamities ? What could exceed the Absurdity of an Author, who should write the Comedy of Nero, with the merry Incident of ripping up his Mother's Belly ; or what would give a greater Shock to Humanity, than an Attempt to expose the Miseries of Poverty and Distress to Ridicule ? And yet, the Reader will not want much Learning to suggest such Instances to himself.

Besides, it may seem remarkable, that Aristotle, who is so fond and free of Definitions, hath not thought proper to define the Ridiculous. Indeed, where he tells us it is proper to Comedy, he hath remarked that Villainy is not its Object : but he hath not, as I remember, positively asserted what is. Nor doth the Abbé Bellegarde, who hath writ a Treatise on this Subject, tho' he shews us many Species of it, once trace it to its Fountain.

The only Source of the true Ridiculous (as it appears to me) is Affectation. But tho' it arises from one Spring only ; when we consider the infinite Streams into which this one branches, we shall presently cease to admire at the copious Field
it

P R E F A C E.

it affords to an Observer. Now *Affectation* proceeds from one of these two Causes; *Vanity* or *Hypocrisy*: For as *Vanity* puts us on affecting false Characters, in order to purchase Applause; so *Hypocrisy* sets us on an Endeavour to avoid Censure, by concealing our Vices under an Appearance of their opposite Virtues. And tho' these two Causes are often confounded, (for there is some Difficulty in distinguishing them) yet, as they proceed from very different Motives; so they are as clearly distinct in their Operations: For indeed, the *Affectation* which arises from *Vanity* is nearer to Truth than the other; as it hath not that violent Repugnancy of Nature to struggle with, which that of the Hypocrite hath. It may be likewise noted, that *Affectation* doth not imply an absolute Negation of those Qualities which are affected: and therefore, tho' when it proceeds from *Hypocrisy*, it be nearly allied to Deceit; yet when it comes from *Vanity* only, it partakes of the Nature of *Ostentation*: for instance, the *Affectation* of *Liberality* in a vain Man differs visibly from the same *Affectation* in the *Avaricious*; for tho' the vain Man is not what he would appear, or hath not the Virtue he affects, to the Degree he would be thought to have it; yet it sits less awkwardly on him than on the avaricious Man, who is the very Reverse of what he would seem to be.

[From the Discovery of this *Affectation* arises the Ridiculous — which always strikes the Reader with

P R E F A C E.

with Surprize and Pleasure ; and that in a higher and stronger Degree when the Affectation arises from Hypocrisy, than when from Vanity : for to discover any one to be the exact Reverse of what he affects, is more surprizing, and consequently more ridiculous, than to find him a little deficient in the Quality he desires the Reputation of. I might observe, that our Ben Johnson, who of all Men understood the Ridiculous the best, hath chiefly used the hypocritical Affectation.

Now from Affectation only, the Misfortunes and Calamities of Life, or the Imperfections of Nature, may become the Objects of Ridicule. Surely he hath a very ill-framed Mind, who can look on Ugliness, Infirmary, or Poverty, as ridiculous in themselves : nor do I believe any Man living who meets a dirty Fellow riding through the Streets in a Cart, is struck with an Idea of the Ridiculous from it ; but if he should see the same Figure descend from his Coach and Six, or bolt from his Chair with his Hat under his Arm, he would then begin to laugh, and with Justice. In the same manner, were we to enter a poor House, and behold a wretched Family shivering with Cold and languishing with Hunger, it would not incline us to Laugh, (at least we must have very diabolical Natures, if it would :) but should we discover there a Grate, instead of Coals, adorned with Flowers, empty Plate or China Dishes on the Side-board,

P R E F A C E.

board, or any other *Affectation of Riches and Finery* either on their *Persons* or in their *Furniture*; we might then indeed be excused for ridiculing so fantastical an Appearance. Much less are natural Imperfections the Object of Derision: but when Ugliness aims at the Applause of Beauty, or Lameness endeavours to display Agility; it is then that these unfortunate Circumstances, which at first moved our Compassion, tend only to raise our Mirth.

The Poet carries this very far ;

None are for being what they are in Fault,
But for not being what they would be thought.

Where if the Metre would suffer the Word Ridiculous to close the first Line, the Thought would be rather more proper. Great Vices are the proper Objects of our Detestation, smaller Faults of our Pity: but *Affectation* appears to me the only true Source of the Ridiculous.

But perhaps it may be objected to me, that I have against my own Rules introduced Vices, and of a very black Kind into this Work. To which I shall answer: First, that it is very difficult to pursue a Series of human Actions and keep clear from them. Secondly, that the Vices to be found here, are rather the accidental Consequences of some human Frailty or Foible, than Causes habitually existing

P R E F A C E.

existing in the Mind. Thirdly, That they are never set forth as the Objects of Ridicule but Detestation. Fourthly, That they are never the principal Figure at that Time on the Scene; and lastly, They never produce the intended Evil.

Having thus distinguished Joseph Andrews from the Productions of Romance Writers on the one Hand, and Burlesque Writers on the other, and given some few very short Hints (for I intended no more) of this Species of Writing, which I have affirmed to be hitherto unattempted in our Language; I shall leave to my good-natur'd Reader to apply my Piece to my Observations, and will detain him no longer than with a Word concerning the Characters in this Work.

And here I solemnly protest, I have no Intention to vilify or asperse any one: for tho' every thing is copied from the Book of Nature, and scarce a Character or Action produced which I have not taken from my own Observations and Experience; yet I have used the utmost Care to obscure the Persons by such different Circumstances, Degrees, and Colours, that it will be impossible to guess at them with any Degree of Certainty; and if it ever happens otherwise, it is only where the Failure characterized is so minute, that it is a Foible only which the Party himself may laugh at as well as any other.

As

P R E F A C E.

As to the Character of Adams, as it is the most glaring in the whole, so I conceive it is not to be found in any Book now extant. It is designed a Character of perfect Simplicity; and as the Goodness of his Heart will recommend him to the Good-natured; so I hope it will excuse me to the Gentlemen of his Cloth; for whom, while they are worthy of their sacred Order, no Man can possibly have a greater Respect. They will therefore excuse me, notwithstanding the low Adventures in which he is engaged, that I have made him a Clergyman; since no other Office could have given him so many Opportunities of displaying his worthy Inclinations.

1 MA 63

T H E



THE
HISTORY
OF THE
ADVENTURES

OF

*Joseph Andrews, and his Friend
Mr. Abraham Adams.*

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

*Of writing Lives in general, and particularly
of Pamela; with a Word by the bye of
Colley Cibber and others.*

IT is a trite but true Observation, that Exam-
ples work more forcibly on the Mind than
Precepts: And if this be just in what is odi-
ous and blameable, it is more strongly so in
what is amiable and praise-worthy. Here Emula-
tion most effectually operates upon us, and in-
spires our Imitation in an irresistible manner. A
good Man therefore is a standing Lesson to all his
Vol. I. B Acquain-

Acquaintance, and of far greater Use in that narrow Circle than a good Book.

But as it often happens that the best Men are but little known, and consequently cannot extend the Usefulness of their Examples a great way ; the Writer may be called in aid to spread their History farther, and to present the amiable Pictures to those who have not the Happiness of knowing the Originals ; and so, by communicating such valuable Patterns to the World, he may perhaps do a more extensive Service to Mankind than the Person whose Life originally afforded the Pattern.

In this Light I have always regarded those Biographers who have recorded the Actions of great and worthy Persons of both Sexes. Not to mention those antient Writers which of late days are little read, being written in obsolete, and as they are generally thought, unintelligible Languages, such as *Plutarch*, *Nepos*, and others which I heard of in my Youth ; our own Language affords many of excellent Use and Instruction, finely calculated to sow the Seeds of Virtue in Youth, and very easy to be comprehended by Persons of moderate Capacity. Such are the History of *John the Great*, who, by his brave and heroic Actions against Men of large and athletic Bodies, obtained the glorious Appellation of *the Giant-killer* ; that of an Earl of *Warwick*, whose Christian Name was *Guy* ; the Lives of *Argalus* and *Parthenia*, and above all, the History of those seven worthy Personages, *the Champions of Christendom*. In all these, Delight is mixed with Instruction, and the Reader is almost as much improved as entertained.

But I pass by these and many others, to mention two Books lately published, which represent an admirable Pattern of the Amiable in either Sex.

The

Ch. 1. JOSEPH ANDREWS, &c. 3

The former of these which deals in Male-virtue, was written by the great Person himself, who lived the Life he hath recorded, and is by many thought to have lived such a Life only in order to write it. The other is communicated to us by an Historian who borrows his Lights, as the common Method is, from authentic Papers and Records. The Reader, I believe, already conjectures, I mean the Lives of Mr. *Colley Cibber*, and of Mrs. *Pamela Andrews*. How artfully doth the former, by insinuating that he *escaped* being promoted to the highest Stations in Church and State, teach us a Contempt of worldly Grandeur! how strongly doth he inculcate an absolute Submission to our Superiors! Lastly, how completely doth he arm us against so uneasy, so wretched a Passion as the Fear of Shame! how clearly doth he expose the Emptiness and Vanity of that Fantom, Reputation!

What the Female Readers are taught by the Memoirs of Mrs. *Andrews*, is so well set forth in the excellent Essays or Letters prefixed to the second and subsequent Editions of that Work, that it would be here a needless Repetition. The authentic History with which I now present the Public, is an Instance of the great Good that Book is likely to do, and of the Prevalence of Example which I have just observed: Since it will appear that it was by keeping the excellent Pattern of his Sister's Virtues before his Eyes, that Mr. *Joseph Andrews* was chiefly enabled to preserve his Purity in the midst of such great Temptations. I shall only add, that this Character of Male-chastity, tho' doubtless as desirable and becoming in one Part of the human Species, as in the other, is almost the only Virtue which the great Apolo-

gift hath not given himself for the sake of giving the Example to his Readers.

CH A P. II.

Of Mr. Joseph Andrews his Birth, Parentage, Education, and great Endowments; with a Word or two concerning Ancestors.

MR. *Joseph Andrews*, the Hero of our ensuing History, was esteemed to be the only Son of *Gaffar* and *Gammer Andrews*, and Brother to the illustrious *Pamela*, whose Virtue is at present so famous. As to his Ancestors, we have searched with great Diligence, but little Success; being unable to trace them farther than his Great Grandfather, who, as an elderly Person in the Parish remembers to have heard his Father say, was an excellent Cudgel-player. Whether he had any Ancestors before this, we must leave to the Opinion of our curious Reader, finding nothing of sufficient Certainty to rely on. However, we cannot omit inserting an Epitaph which an ingenious Friend of ours hath communicated:

*Stay Traveller, for underneath this Pew
Lies fast asleep that merry Man Andrew;
When the last Day's great Sun shall gild the Skies,
Then he shall from his Tomb get up and rise.
Be merry while thou canst: For surely thou
Shall shortly be as sad as he is now.*

The Words are almost out of the Stone with Antiquity. But it is needless to observe, that *Andrew* here is writ without an *s*, and is besides a Christian

stian Name. My Friend moreover conjectures this to have been the Founder of that Sect of laughing Philosophers, since called *Merry Andrews*.

To wave therefore a Circumstance, which, tho' mentioned in conformity to the exact Rules of Biography, is not greatly material; I proceed to things of more consequence. Indeed it is sufficiently certain, that he had as many Ancestors as the best Man living; and perhaps, if we look five or six hundred Years backwards, might be related to some Persons of very great Figure at present, whose Ancestors within half the last Century are buried in as great Obscurity. But suppose for Argument's sake we should admit that he had no Ancestors at all, but had sprung up, according to the modern Phrase, out of a Dunghil, as the *Athenians* pretended they themselves did from the Earth, would not this * *Autokopros* have been justly entitled to all the Praise arising from his own Virtues? Would it not be hard, that a Man who hath no Ancestors, should therefore be rendered incapable of acquiring Honour; when we see so many who have no Virtues, enjoying the Honour of their Forefathers? At ten Years old (by which time his Education was advanced to Writing and Reading) he was bound an Apprentice, according to the Statute, to Sir *Thomas Booby* an Uncle of Mr. *Booby's* by the Father's Side. Sir *Thomas* having then an Estate in his own Hands, the young *Andrews* was at first employed in what in the Country they call *keeping Birds*. His Office was to perform the Part the Antients assigned to the God *Priapus*, which Deity the Moderns call by the Name of *Jack-o' Lent*: But his Voice being

* In *English*, sprung from a Dunghil.

so extremely musical, that it rather allured the Birds than terrified them, he was soon transplanted from the Fields into the Dog-kennel, where he was placed under the Huntsman, and made what Sportsmen term a *Whipper-in*. For this Place likewise the Sweetness of his Voice disqualified him; the Dogs preferring the Melody of his chiding to all the alluring Notes of the Huntsman, who soon became so incensed at it, that he desired Sir *Thomas* to provide otherwise for him; and constantly laid every Fault the Dogs were at, to the Account of the poor Boy, who was now transplanted to the Stable. Here he soon gave Proofs of Strength and Agility, beyond his Years, and constantly rode the most spirited and vicious Horses to water with an Intrepidity which surprized every one. While he was in this Station, he rode several Races for Sir *Thomas*, and this with such Expertness and Success, that the neighbouring Gentlemen frequently solicited the Knight, to permit little *Joey* (for so he was called) to ride their Matches. The best Gamesters, before they laid their Money, always enquired which Horse little *Joey* was to ride; and the Betts were rather proportioned by the Rider than by the Horse himself; especially after he had scornfully refused a considerable Bribe to play booty on such an Occasion. This extremely raised his Character, and so pleased the Lady *Bobby*, that she desired to have him, (being now seventeen Years of Age) for her own Foot-boy.

Joey was now preferred from the Stable to attend on his Lady, to go on her Errands, stand behind her Chair, wait at her Tea-table, and carry her Prayer-Book to Church; at which Place, his Voice gave him an Opportunity of distinguish-
ing

ing himself by singing Psalms: he behaved likewise in every other respect so well at divine Service, that it recommended him to the Notice of Mr. *Abraham Adams* the Curate, who took an Opportunity one Day, as he was drinking a Cup of Ale in Sir *Thomas's* Kitchen, to ask the young Man several Questions concerning Religion; with his Answers to which he was wonderfully pleased.

CHAP. III.

Of Mr. Abraham Adams the Curate, Mrs. Slipflop the Chambermaid, and others.

MR. *Abraham Adams* was an excellent Scholar. He was a perfect Master of the *Greek* and *Latin* Languages; to which he added a great Share of Knowledge in the Oriental Tongues, and could read and translate *French, Italian* and *Spanish*. He had applied many Years to the most severe Study, and had treasured up a Fund of Learning rarely to be met with in a University. He was besides a Man of good Sense, good Parts, and good Nature; but was at the same time as entirely ignorant of the Ways of this World, as an Infant just entered into it could possibly be. As he had never any Intention to deceive, so he never suspected such a Design in others. He was generous, friendly and brave to an Excess; but Simplicity was his Characteristick: he did, no more than Mr. *Colley Cibber*, apprehend any such Passions as Malice and Envy to exist in Mankind, which was indeed less remarkable in a Country Parson than in a Gentleman who hath past his Life behind the Scenes, a Place which hath been seldom thought the School of Innocence; and where a very little

Observation would have convinced the great Apologist, that those Passions have a real Existence in the human Mind.

His Virtue and his other Qualifications, as they rendered him equal to his Office ; so they made him an agreeable and valuable Companion, and had so much endeared and well recommended him to a Bishop ; that at the Age of Fifty, he was provided with a handsome Income of twenty-three Pounds a Year ; which however, he could not make any great Figure with : because he lived in a dear Country, and was a little incumbered with a Wife and six Children.

It was this Gentleman, who having, as I have said, observed the singular Devotion of young *Andrews*, had found means to question him concerning several Particulars ; as how many Books there were in the New Testament ? which were they ? how many Chapters they contained ? and such like ; to all which Mr. *Adams* privately said, he answered much better than Sir *Thomas*, or two other neighbouring Justices of the Peace could probably have done.

Mr. *Adams* was wonderfully solicitous to know at what Time, and by what Opportunity the Youth became acquainted with these Matters : *Joey* told him, that he had very early learnt to read and write by the Goodness of his Father, who, though he had not Interest enough to get him into a Charity School, because a Cousin of his Father's Landlord did not vote on the right Side for a Church-warden in a Borough-Town, yet had been himself at the Expence of Sixpence a Week for his Learning. He told him likewise, that ever since he was in Sir *Thomas*'s Family, he had employed all his Hours of Leisure in reading good Books ;

Books; that he had read the Bible, the whole Duty of Man, and *Thomas à Kempis*; and that as often as he could, without being perceived, he had studied a great good Book which lay open in the Hall Window, where he had read, *as how the Devil carried away half a Church in Sermon-time, without hurting one of the Congregation*; and *as how a Field of Corn ran away down a Hill with all the Trees upon it, and covered another Man's Meadow*. This sufficiently assured Mr. Adams, that the good Book meant could be no other than *Baker's Chronicle*.

The Curate, surprized to find such Instances of Industry and Application in a young Man, who had never met with the least Encouragement, asked him, if he did not extremely regret the want of a liberal Education, and the not having been born of Parents, who might have indulged his Talents and Desire of Knowledge? To which he answered, 'He hoped he had profited somewhat better from the Books he had read, than to lament his Condition in this World. That for his part, he was perfectly content with the State to which he was called, that he should endeavour to improve his Talent, which was all required of him, but not repine at his own Lot, nor envy those of his Betters.' 'Well said, my Lad, replied the Curate, and I wish some who have read many more good Books, nay, and some who have written good Books themselves, had profited so much by them.'

Adams had no nearer Access to Sir Thomas or my Lady, than through the Waiting-Gentlewoman: For Sir Thomas was too apt to estimate Men merely by their Dress, or Fortune; and my

Lady was a Woman of Gaiety, who had been blest'd with a Town-Education, and never spoke of any of her Country Neighbours by any other Appellation than that of *The Brutes*. They both regarded the Curate as a kind of Domestic only, belonging to the Parson of the Parish, who was at this time at variance with the Knight; for the Parson had for many Years lived in a constant State of Civil War, or, which is perhaps as bad, of Civil Law, with Sir *Thomas* himself and the Tenants of his Manor. The Foundation of this Quarrel was a Modus, by setting which aside, an Advantage of several Shillings *per Annum* would have accrued to the Rector: but he had not yet been able to accomplish his Purpose; and had reaped hitherto nothing better from the Suits than the Pleasure (which he used indeed frequently to say was no small one) of reflecting that he had utterly undone many of the poor Tenants, tho' he had at the same time greatly impoverished himself.

Mrs. *Slipslop* the Waiting-Gentlewoman, being herself the Daughter of a Curate, preserved some Respect for *Adams*; she professed great Regard for his Learning, and would frequently dispute with him on Points of Theology; but always insisted on a Deference to be paid to her Understanding, as she had been frequently at *London*, and knew more of the World than a Country Parson could pretend to.

She had in these Disputes a particular Advantage over *Adams*: for she was a mighty Affecter of hard Words, which she used in such a manner, that the Parson, who durst not offend her by calling her Words in question, was frequently at some Loss to guess her Meaning, and would have been much less puzzled by an *Arabian Manuscript*.

Ad. ms

Adams therefore took an Opportunity one Day, after a pretty long Discourse with her on the *Essence*, (or, as she pleased to term it, the *Incence*) of Matter, to mention the Case of young *Andrews*; desiring her to recommend him to her Lady as a Youth very susceptible of Learning, and one whose Instruction in *Latin* he would himself undertake; by which means he might be qualified for a higher Station than that of a Footman: and added, she knew it was in his Master's Power easily to provide for him in a better manner. He therefore desired, that the Boy might be left behind under his Care.

'La, Mr. *Adams*, said Mrs. *Slipslop*, do you think my Lady will suffer any *Preambles* about any such Matter? She is going to *London* very *concisely*, and I am *confidous* would not leave *Joey* behind her on any account; for he is one of the genteelest young Fellows you may see in a Summer's Day, and I am *confidous* she would as soon think of parting with a Pair of her Grey-Mares; for she values herself as much on one as the other.' *Adams* would have interrupted, but she proceeded: 'And why is *Latin* more *necessitous* for a Footman than a Gentleman? It is very proper that you Clargymen must learn it, because you can't preach without it: but I have heard Gentlemen say in *London*, that it is fit for nobody else. I am *confidous* my Lady would be angry with me for mentioning it; and I shall draw myself into no such *Delemy*.' At which Words her Lady's Bell rung, and Mr. *Adams* was forced to retire; nor could he gain a second Opportunity with her before their *London* Journey, which happened a few Days afterwards. However, *Andrews* behaved very thankfully and gratefully

gratefully to him for his intended Kindness, which he told him he never would forget, and at the same time received from the good Man many Admonitions concerning the Regulation of his future Conduct, and his Perseverance in Innocence and Industry.

C H A P IV.

What happened after their Journey to London.

N O sooner was young *Andrews* arrived at *London*, than he began to scrape an Acquaintance with his party-colour'd Brethren, who endeavour'd to make him despise his former Course of Life. His Hair was cut after the newest Fashion, and became his chief Care: He went abroad with it all the Morning in Papers, and dress'd it out in the Afternoon. They could not however teach him to game, swear, drink, nor any other genteel Vice the Town abounded with. He applied most of his leisure Hours to Music, in which he greatly improved himself; and became so perfect a Connoisseur in that Art, that he led the Opinion of all the other Footmen at an Opera, and they never condemned or applauded a single Song contrary to his Approbation, or Dislike. He was a little too forward in Riots at the Play-Houses and Assemblies; and when he attended his Lady at Church (which was but seldom) he behaved with less seeming Devotion than formerly: however, if he was outwardly a pretty Fellow, his Morals remained entirely uncorrupted, tho' he was at the same time smarter and genteeler, than

than any of the Beaus in Town, either in or out of Livery.

His Lady, who had often said of him that *Joey* was the handsomest and genteelest Footman in the Kingdom, but that it was pity he wanted Spirit, began now to find that Fault no longer; on the contrary, she was frequently heard to cry out, *Aye there is some Life in this Fellow*. She plainly saw the Effects which the Town-Air hath on the soberest Constitutions. She would now walk out with him into *Hyde-Park* in a Morning, and when tired, which happened almost every Minute, would lean on his Arm, and converse with him in great Familiarity. Whenever she stepped out of her Coach, she would take him by the Hand, and sometimes, for fear of stumbling, press it very hard; she admitted him to deliver Messages at her Bed-side in a Morning, leer'd at him at Table, and indulged him in all those innocent Freedoms which Women of Figure may permit without the least Sully of their Virtue.

But tho' their Virtue remains unsullied; yet now and then some small Arrows will glance on the Shadow of it, their Reputation; and so it fell out to Lady *Booby*, who happened to be walking Arm-in-Arm with *Joey* one Morning in *Hyde-Park*, when Lady *Tittle* and Lady *Tattle* came accidentally by in their Coach, *Bless me*, says Lady *Tittle*, *can I believe my Eyes? Is that Lady Booby?* Surely, says *Tattle*. *But what makes you surprized? Why, is not that her Footman*, reply'd *Tittle*? At which *Tattle* laughed and cried, *An old Business, I assure you, is it possible you should not have heard it? The whole Town hath known it this half Year*. The Consequence of this Interview was a Whisper through a hundred Visits,

sits, which were separately performed by the two Ladies * the same Afternoon, and might have had a mischievous Effect, had it not been stopt by two fresh Reputations which were published the Day afterwards, and engrossed the whole Talk of the Town.

But whatever Opinion or Suspicion the scandalous Inclination of Defamers might entertain of Lady *Booby's* innocent Freedoms, it is certain they made no Impression on young *Andrews*, who never offered to encroach beyond the Liberties which his Lady allowed him. A Behaviour which she imputed to the violent Respect he preserved for her, and which served only to heighten a something she began to conceive, and which the next Chapter will open a little farther.

CH A P. V.

The Death of Sir Thomas Booby, with the affectionate and mournful Behaviour of his Widow, and the great Purity of Joseph Andrews.

AT this Time, an Accident happened which put a stop to those agreeable Walks, which probably would have soon puffed up the Cheeks of Fame, and caused her to blow her brazen Trumpet through the Town; and this was no other than the Death of Sir *Thomas Booby*, who, departing this Life, left his disconsolate Lady confined to her House, as closely as if she herself had been

* It may seem an Absurdity that *Tattle* should visit, as she actually did, to spread a known Scandal: but the Reader may reconcile this, by supposing with me, that, notwithstanding what she says, this was her first Acquaintance with it.

attacked

attacked by some violent Disease. During the first
 six Days the poor Lady admitted none but Mrs.
Slipslop, and three Female Friends, who made a
 Party at Cards: but on the seventh she ordered
Joey, whom for a good Reason we shall hereafter
 call JOSEPH, to bring up her Tea-kettle. The
 Lady being in Bed, called *Joseph* to her, bade him
 sit down, and having accidentally laid her Hand
 on his, she asked him, *if he had ever been in*
Love? *Joseph* answered, with some Confusion,
 it was time enough for one so young as himself to
 think on such Things. As young as you are, re-
 ply'd the Lady, I am convinced you are no Stran-
 ger to that Passion; 'Come *Joey*,' says she,
 'tell me truly, who is the happy Girl whose Eyes
 'have made a Conquest of you?' *Joseph* returned,
 that all the Women he had ever seen, were equal-
 ly indifferent to him. 'O then,' said the Lady,
 'you are a general Lover. Indeed you handsome
 'Fellows, like handsome Women, are very long
 'and difficult in fixing: but yet you shall never
 'perswade me that your Heart is so insusceptible
 'of Affection; I rather impute what you say to
 'your Secrecy, a very commendable Quality,
 'and what I am far from being angry with you
 'for. Nothing can be more unworthy in a young
 'Man than to betray any Intimacies with the La-
 'dies.' *Ladies! Madam*, said *Joseph*, *I am sure*
I never had the Impudence to think of any that de-
serve that Name. 'Don't pretend to too much
 'Modesty, said she; for that sometimes may be
 'impertinent: but pray, answer me this Questi-
 'on. Suppose a Lady should happen to like you;
 'suppose she should prefer you to all your Sex,
 'and admit you to the same Familiarities as you
 'might have hoped for, if you had been born
 'her

‘ her Equal, are you certain that no Vanity could
‘ tempt you to discover her? Answer me honest-
‘ ly, *Joseph*; Have you so much more Sense and
‘ so much more Virtue than you handsome young
‘ Fellows generally have, who make no Scruple
‘ of sacrificing our dear Reputation to your Pride,
‘ without considering the great Obligation we lay
‘ on you, by our Condescension and Confidence?
‘ Can you keep a Secret, my *Joey*?’ Madam,
says he, ‘ I hope your Ladyship can’t tax me with
‘ ever betraying the Secrets of the Family; and
‘ I hope, if you was to turn me away, I might
‘ have that Character of you.’ ‘ I don’t intend to
‘ turn you away, *Joey*,’ said she, and sighed, ‘ I
‘ am afraid it is not in my Power.’ She then raised
herself a little in her Bed, and discovered one of
the whitest Necks that ever was seen; at which
Joseph blushed, La! says she, in an affected Sur-
prise, ‘ what am I doing? I have trusted myself
‘ with a Man alone, naked in Bed; suppose you
‘ should have any wicked Intentions upon my Ho-
‘ nour, how should I defend myself?’ *Joseph*
protested that he never had the least evil Design
against her. ‘ No, says she, perhaps you may
‘ not call your Designs wicked; and perhaps they
‘ are not so.’—He swore they were not. ‘ You
‘ misunderstand me, says she; I mean if they were
‘ against my Honour, they may not be wicked;
‘ but the World calls them so. But then, say
‘ you, the World will never know any thing of
‘ the Matter; yet would not that be trusting to
‘ your Secrecy? Must not my Reputation be
‘ then in your Power? Would you not then be
‘ my Master?’ *Joseph* begged her Ladyship to
be comforted; for that he would never imagine
the least wicked thing against her, and that he
had

had rather die a thousand Deaths than give her any Reason to suspect him. ‘ Yes, said she, I must have Reason to suspect you. Are you not a Man? and without Vanity I may pretend to some Charms. But perhaps you may fear I should prosecute you; indeed I hope you do; and yet Heaven knows I should never have the Confidence to appear before a Court of Justice; and you know, *Joey*, I am of a forgiving Temper. Tell me, *Joey*, don’t you think I should forgive you?’ ‘ Indeed, Madam, says *Joseph*, I will never do any thing to disoblige your Ladyship.’ ‘ How, says she, do you think it would not disoblige me then? Do you think I would willingly suffer you?’ ‘ I don’t understand you, Madam,’ says *Joseph*. ‘ Don’t you?’ said she, ‘ then you either are a Fool, or pretend to be so; I find I was mistaken in you. So get you down Stairs, and never let me see your Face again: your pretended Innocence cannot impose on me.’ ‘ Madam, said *Joseph*, I would not have your Ladyship think any Evil of me. I have always endeavoured to be a dutiful Servant both to you and my Master.’ ‘ O thou Villain! answered my Lady, Why didst thou mention the Name of that dear Man, unless to torment me, to bring his precious Memory to my Mind,’ (*and then she burst into a Fit of Tears.*) ‘ Get thee from my Sight, I shall never endure thee more.’ At which Words she turned away from him; and *Joseph* retreated from the Room in a most disconsolate Condition, and writ that Letter which the Reader will find in the next Chapter.

C H A P. VI.

How Joseph Andrews writ a Letter to his Sister Pamela.

To Mrs. *Pamela Andrews*, living with Squire *Booby*.

Dear Sister,

SINCE I received your Letter of your good Lady's Death, we have had a Misfortune of the same kind in our Family. My worthy Master Sir Thomas died about four Days ago; and what is worse, my poor Lady is certainly gone distracted. None of the Servants expected her to take it so to heart, because they quarrelled almost every Day of their Lives: but no more of that, because you know, Pamela, I never loved to tell the Secrets of my Master's Family; but to be sure you must have known they never loved one another; and I have heard her Ladyship wish his Honour dead above a thousand times: but no body knows what it is to lose a Friend 'till they have lost him.

Don't tell any body what I write, because I should not care to have Folks say I discover what passes in our Family: but if it had not been so great a Lady, I should have thought she had had a-mind to me. Dear Pamela, don't tell any body: but she ordered me to sit down by her Bed-side, when she was in naked Bed; and she held my Hand, and talked exactly as a Lady does to her Sweet-heart in a Stage-Play, which I have seen in Covent-Garden, while she wanted him to be no better than he should be.

If Madam be mad, I shall not care for staying
long

long in the Family: so I heartily wish you could get me a Place either at the Squire's, or some other neighbouring Gentleman's, unless it be true that you are going to be married to Parson Williams, as Folks talk, and then I should be very willing to be his Clerk: for which you know I am qualified, being able to read, and to set a Psalm.

I fancy I shall be discharged very soon; and the Moment I am, unless I hear from you, I shall return to my old Master's Country-Seat, if it be only to see Parson Adams, who is the best Man in the World. London is a bad Place, and there is so little good Fellowship, that the next-door Neighbours don't know one another. Pray give my Service to all Friends that enquire for me; so I rest

Your Loving Brother,

JOSEPH ANDREWS.

As soon as *Joseph* had sealed and directed this Letter he walked down Stairs, where he met Mrs. *Slipslop*, with whom we shall take this Opportunity to bring the Reader a little better acquainted. She was a maiden Gentlewoman of about Forty-five Years of Age, who having made a small Slip in her Youth, had continued a good Maid ever since. She was not at this Time remarkably handsome; being very short, and rather too corpulent in Body, and somewhat red, with the Addition of Pimples in the Face. Her Nose was likewise rather too large, and her Eyes too little; nor did she resemble a Cow so much in her Breath, as in two brown Globes which she carried before her; one of her Legs was also a little shorter than the other, which occasioned her

to

to limp as she walked. This fair Creature had long cast the Eyes of Affection on *Joseph*, in which she had not met with quite so good Success as she probably wished, tho' besides the Allurements of her native Charms, she had given him Tea, Sweetmeats, Wine, and many other Delicacies, of which, by keeping the Keys, she had the absolute Command. *Joseph* however, had not returned the least Gratitude to all these Favours, not even so much as a Kiss; tho' I would not insinuate she was so easily to be satisfied: for surely then he would have been highly blameable. The truth is, she was arrived at an Age when she thought she might indulge herself in any Liberties with a Man, without the Danger of bringing a third Person into the World to betray them. She imagined, that by so long a Self-denial, she had not only made amends for the small Slip of her Youth above hinted at: but had likewise laid up a Quantity of Merit to excuse any future Failings. In a word, she resolved to give a loose to her amorous Inclinations, and to pay off the Debt of Pleasure which she found she owed herself, as fast as possible.

With these Charms of Person, and in this Disposition of Mind, she encountred poor *Joseph* at the Bottom of the Stairs, and asked him if he would drink a Glass of something good this Morning. *Joseph*, whose Spirits were not a little cast down, very readily and thankfully accepted the Offer; and together they went into a Closet, where having delivered him a full Glass of Ratifia, and desired him to sit down, Mrs. *Slipslop* thus began:

' Sure nothing can be a more simple *Contract*
' in a Woman, than to place her Affections on a
' Boy. If I had ever thought it would have been
' my

‘ my Fate, I should have wished to die a thou-
 ‘ sand Deaths rather than live to see that Day. If
 ‘ we like a Man, the lightest Hint *sophisticates*.
 ‘ Whereas a Boy *proposes* upon us to break through
 ‘ all the *Regulations* of Modesty, before we can
 ‘ make any *Oppression* upon him.’ *Joseph*, who
 did not understand a Word she said, answered,
 ‘ *Yes Madam ;—*’ ‘ Yes Madam !’ replied Mrs.
Slipslop with some Warmth, ‘ Do you intend to
 ‘ *result* my Passion ? Is it not enough, ungrateful
 ‘ as you are, to make no Return to all the Fa-
 ‘ vours I have done you : but you must treat me
 ‘ with *Ironing* ? Barbarous Monster ! how have
 ‘ I deserved that my Passion should be *resulted* and
 ‘ treated with *Ironing* ?’ ‘ Madam,’ answered
Joseph, ‘ I don’t understand your hard Words :
 ‘ but I am certain, you have no Occasion to call
 ‘ me ungrateful : for so far from intending you
 ‘ any Wrong, I have always loved you as well as if
 ‘ you had been my own Mother.’ ‘ How, Sirrah !’
 says Mrs. *Slipslop* in a Rage : ‘ Your own Mo-
 ‘ ther ? Do you *assinuate* that I am old enough to
 ‘ be your Mother ? I don’t know what a Stripling
 ‘ may think : but I believe a Man would *refer* me
 ‘ to any Green-Sickness silly Girl *whatsoever* :
 ‘ but I ought to despise you rather than be angry
 ‘ with you, for *referring* the Conversation of
 ‘ Girls to that of a Woman of Sense.’ ‘ Ma-
 ‘ dam,’ says *Joseph*, ‘ I am sure I have always
 ‘ valued the Honour you did me by your Conver-
 ‘ sation ; for I know you are a Woman of Learn-
 ‘ ing.’ ‘ Yes but, *Joseph*,’ said she, a little soft-
 ened by the Compliment to her Learning, ‘ If
 ‘ you had a Value for me, you certainly would
 ‘ have found some Method of shewing it me ; for
 ‘ I am *convinced* you must see the Value I have for
 ‘ you.

‘ you. Yes, *Joseph*, my Eyes, whether I would
 ‘ or no, must have declared a Passion I cannot
 ‘ conquer.—Oh ! *Joseph* !

As when a hungry Tigress, who long has traversed the Woods in fruitless Search, sees within the Reach of her Claws a Lamb, she prepares to leap on her Prey ; or as a voracious Pike, of immense Size, surveys through the liquid Element a Roach or Gudgeon, which cannot escape her Jaws, opens them wide to swallow the little Fish ; so did Mrs. *Slipslop* prepare to lay her violent amorous Hands on the poor *Joseph*, when luckily her Mistress’s Bell rung, and delivered the intended Martyr from her Clutches. She was obliged to leave him abruptly, and to defer the Execution of her Purpose till some other Time. We shall therefore return to the Lady *Booby*, and give our Reader some Account of her Behaviour, after she was left by *Joseph* in a Temper of Mind not greatly different from that of the inflamed *Slipslop*.

C H A P. VII.

Sayings of wise Men. A Dialogue between the Lady and her Maid ; and a Panegyric, or rather Satire on the Passion of Love, in the sublime Style.

IT is the Observation of some ancient Sage, whose Name I have forgot, that Passions operate differently on the human Mind, as Diseases on the Body, in proportion to the Strength or Weakness, Soundness or Rottenness of the one and the other.

We hope therefore a judicious Reader will give himself

himself some Pains to observe, what we have so greatly laboured to describe, the different Operations of this Passion of Love, in the gentle and cultivated Mind of the Lady *Booby*, from those which it effected in the less polished and coarser Disposition of Mrs. *Slipslop*.

Another Philosopher, whose Name also at present escapes my Memory, hath somewhere said, that Resolutions taken in the Absence of the beloved Object are very apt to vanish in its Presence; on both which wise Sayings the following Chapter may serve as a Comment.

No sooner had *Joseph* left the Room in the Manner we had before related, than the Lady, enraged at her Disappointment, began to reflect with Severity on her Conduct. Her Love was now changed to Disdain, which Pride assisted to torment her. She despised herself for the Meanness of her Passion, and *Joseph* for its ill Success. However, she had now got the better of it in her own Opinion, and determined immediately to dismiss the Object. After much tossing and turning in her Bed, and many Soliloquies, which, if we had no better Matter for our Reader, we would give him; she at last rung the Bell as above-mentioned, and was presently attended by Mrs. *Slipslop*, who was not much better pleased with *Joseph* than the Lady herself.

Slipslop, said Lady *Booby*, when did you see *Joseph*? The poor Woman was so surprized at the unexpected Sound of his Name, at so critical a time, that she had the greatest Difficulty to conceal the Confusion she was under, from her Mistress; whom she answered, nevertheless, with pretty good Confidence, though not entirely void of Fear of Suspicion, that she had not seen him

that Morning. ‘I am afraid,’ said Lady Booby, ‘he is a wild young Fellow.’ ‘That he is,’ said *Slipslop*, ‘and a wicked one too. To my Knowledge he games, drinks, swears, and fights eternally: besides, he is horribly *indicted* to Wenching.’ ‘Ay!’ said the Lady! ‘I never heard that of him.’ ‘O Madam, answered the other, he is so lewd a Rascal, that if your Ladyship keeps him much longer, you will not have one Virgin in your House except myself. And yet I can’t conceive what the Wenches see in him, to be so foolishly fond as they are: in my Eyes he is as ugly a Scarecrow as I ever *upheld*.’ ‘Nay, said the Lady, the Boy is well enough. — ‘La Ma’am,’ cries *Slipslop*, ‘I think him the *ragmaticallest* Fellow in the Family.’ ‘Sure, *Slipslop*,’ says she, ‘you are mistaken: but which of the Women do you most suspect?’ ‘Madam,’ says *Slipslop*, ‘there is *Betty* the Chamber-Maid, I am almost *convinced*, is with Child by him.’ ‘Ay!’ says the Lady, ‘then pray pay her her Wages instantly. I will keep no such Sluts in my Family. And as for *Joseph*, you may discard him too.’ ‘Would your Ladyship have him paid off immediately?’ cries *Slipslop*, ‘for perhaps, when *Betty* is gone, he may mend; and really the Boy is a good Servant, and a strong healthy *luscious* Boy enough.’ ‘This Morning,’ answered the Lady with some Vehemence. ‘I wish Madam,’ cries *Slipslop*, ‘your Ladyship would be so good as to try him a little longer.’ ‘I will not have my Commands disputed,’ said the Lady; ‘sure you are not fond of him yourself.’ ‘I Madam?’ cries *Slipslop*, reddening, if not blushing, ‘I should be sorry to think your Lady-

‘ship

‘ ship had any Reason to *respect* me of Fondness
 ‘ for a Fellow ; and if it be your Pleasure, I shall
 ‘ fulfil it with as much *reluctance* as possible.’
 ‘ As little, I suppose you mean.’ said the Lady ;
 ‘ and so about it instantly.’ Mrs. *Slipslop* went
 out, and the Lady had scarce taken two turns, be-
 fore she fell to knocking and ringing with great Vi-
 olence. *Slipslop*, who did not travel post-haste, soon
 returned, and was countermanded as to *Joseph*, but
 ordered to send *Betty* about her Business without De-
 lay. She went out a second time with much greater
 Alacrity than before ; when the Lady began im-
 mediately to accuse herself of want of Resolution,
 and to apprehend the Return of her Affection with
 its pernicious Consequences : she therefore applied
 herself again to the Bell, and resummoned Mrs.
Slipslop into her Presence ; who again returned,
 and was told by her Mistress, that she had consid-
 ered better of the Matter, and was absolutely re-
 solved to turn away *Joseph* ; which she ordered
 her to do immediately. *Slipslop*, who knew the
 Violence of her Lady’s Temper, and would not
 venture her Place for any *Adonis* or *Hercules* in the
 Universe, left her a third time ; which she had no
 sooner done, than the little God *Cupid*, fearing
 he had not yet done the Lady’s Business, took a
 fresh Arrow with the sharpest Point out of his
 Quiver, and shot it directly into her Heart : in
 other and plainer Language, the Lady’s Passion
 got the better of her Reason. She called back
Slipslop once more, and told her, she had resolved
 to see the Boy, and examine him herself ; there-
 fore bid her send him up. This wavering in her
 Mistress’s Temper probably put something into
 the Waiting-Gentlewoman’s Head, not necessary
 to mention to the sagacious Reader.

Lady Booby was going to call her back again, but could not prevail with herself. The next Consideration therefore was, how she should behave to *Joseph* when he came in. She resolved to preserve all the Dignity of the Woman of Fashion to her Servant, and to indulge herself in this last View of *Joseph* (for that she was most certainly resolved it should be) at his own Expence, by first insulting, and then discarding him.

O Love, what monstrous Tricks dost thou play with thy Votaries of both Sexes ! How dost thou deceive them, and make them deceive themselves ! Their Follies are thy Delight ! Their Sighs make thee laugh, and their Pangs are thy Merriment !

Not the Great *Rich*, who turns Men into Monkeys, Wheelbarrows, and whatever else best humours his Fancy, hath so strangely metamorphosed the human Shape ; nor the Great *Cibber*, who confounds all Number, Gender, and breaks through every Rule of Grammar at his Will, hath so distorted the *English* Language, as thou dost metamorphose and distort the human Senses.

Thou puttest out our Eyes, stoppest up our Ears, and takest away the Power of our Nostrils ; so that we can neither see the largest Object, hear the loudest Noise, nor smell the most poignant Perfume. Again, when thou pleasest, thou canst make a Mole-hill appear as a Mountain ; a *Jew's*-Harp sound like a Trumpet ; and a Dazy smell like a Violet. Thou canst make Cowardice brave, Avarice generous, Pride humble, and Cruelty tender-hearted. In short, thou turnest the Heart of Man inside out, as a Juggler doth a Petticoat, and bringest whatsoever pleaseth thee out from it.

If

If there be any one who doubts all this, let him read the next Chapter.

CHAP. VIII.

In which, after some very fine Writing, the History goes on, and relates the Interview between the Lady and Joseph; where the latter hath set an Example, which we despair of seeing followed by his Sex, in this vicious Age.

NOW the Rake *Hesperus* had called for his Breeches, and having well rubbed his drowsy Eyes, prepared to dress himself for all Night; by whose Example his Brother Rakes on Earth likewise leave those Beds, in which they had slept away the Day. Now *Thetis* the good Housewife began to put on the Pot in order to regale the good Man *Phæbus*, after his daily Labours were over. In vulgar Language, it was in the Evening when *Joseph* attended his Lady's Orders.

But as it becomes us to preserve the Character of this Lady, who is the Heroine of our Tale; and as we have naturally a wonderful Tenderness for that beautiful Part of the human Species, called the Fair Sex; before we discover too much of her Frailty to our Reader, it will be proper to give him a lively Idea of the vast Temptation, which overcame all the Efforts of a modest and virtuous Mind; and then we humbly hope his Good-nature will rather pity than condemn the Imperfection of human Virtue.

Nay, the Ladies themselves will, we hope, be induced, by considering the uncommon Variety of Charms, which united in this young Man's Person, to bridle their rampant Passion for Chastity, and be at least as mild as their violent Modesty and Virtue will permit them, in censuring the Conduct of a Woman, who, perhaps, was in her own Disposition as chaste as those pure and sanctified Virgins, who, after a Life innocently spent in the Gaieties of the Town, begin about Fifty to attend twice *per diem* at the polite Churches and Chapels, to return Thanks for the Grace which preserved them formerly amongst Beaus, from Temptations perhaps less powerful than what now attacked the *Lady Booby*.

Mr. *Joseph Andrews* was now in the one and twentieth Year of his Age. He was of the highest Degree of middle Stature. His Limbs were put together with great Elegance and no less Strength. His Legs and Thighs were formed in the exactest Proportion. His Shoulders were broad and brawny; but yet his Arms hung so easily, that he had all the Symptoms of Strength without the least Clumsiness. His Hair was of a nut-brown Colour, and was displayed in wanton Ringlets down his Back. His Forehead was high, his Eyes dark, and as full of Sweetness as of Fire. His Nose a little inclined to the Roman. His Teeth white and even. His Lips full, red, and soft. His Beard was only rough on his Chin and upper Lip; but his Cheeks, in which his Blood glowed, were overspread with a thick Down. His Countenance had a Tenderness joined with a Sensibility inexpressible. Add to this the most perfect Neatness in his Dress, and an Air, which to those who have

have not seen many Noblemen, would give an Idea of Nobility.

Such was the Person who now appeared before the Lady. She viewed him some time in Silence, and twice or thrice before she spake, changed her Mind as to the manner in which she should begin. At length, she said to him, ‘ *Joseph*, I am sorry
 ‘ to hear such Complaints against you ; I am told
 ‘ you behave so rudely to the Maids, that they
 ‘ cannot do their Business in quiet ; I mean those
 ‘ who are not wicked enough to hearken to your
 ‘ Solicitations. As to others, they may perhaps
 ‘ not call you rude : for there are wicked Sluts
 ‘ who make one ashamed of one’s own Sex ; and
 ‘ are as ready to admit any nauseous Familiarity
 ‘ as Fellows to offer it ; nay, there are such in
 ‘ my Family ; but they shall not stay in it ; that
 ‘ impudent Trollop, who is with Child by you,
 ‘ is discharged by this time.’

As a Person who is struck through the Heart with a Thunderbolt, looks extremely surprised, nay, and perhaps is so too—Thus the poor *Joseph* received the false Accusation of his Mistress ; he blushed and looked confounded, which she misinterpreted to be Symptoms of his Guilt, and thus went on :

‘ Come hither, *Joseph* : another Mistress might
 ‘ discard you for these Offences ; but I have a
 ‘ Compassion for your Youth, and if I could be
 ‘ certain you would be no more guilty—Consider,
 ‘ Child, (*laying her Hand carelessly upon his*) you
 ‘ are a handsome young Fellow, and might do
 ‘ better ; you might make your Fortune—’
 ‘ Madam, said *Joseph*, I do assure your Ladyship,
 ‘ I don’t know whether any Maid in the House is

‘ Man or Woman—’. ‘ Oh fie! *Joseph*, answer’d the Lady, don’t commit another Crime in denying the Truth. I could pardon the first; but I hate a Lyar.’ Madam, cries *Joseph*, I hope your Ladyship will not be offended at my asserting my Innocence: for by all that is sacred, I have never offered more than Kissing.’ ‘ Kissing!’ said the Lady with great Discomposure of Countenance, and more Redness in her Cheeks, than Anger in her Eyes, ‘ do you call that no Crime? Kissing, *Joseph*, is as a Prologue to a Play. Can I believe a young Fellow of your Age and Complexion will be content with Kissing? No, *Joseph*, there is no Woman who grants that, but will grant more; and I am deceived greatly in you, if you would not put her closely to it. What would you think *Joseph*, if I admitted you to kiss me?’ *Joseph* reply’d, ‘ he would sooner die than have any such Thought.’ And yet, *Joseph*, returned she, Ladies have admitted their Footmen to such Familiarities; and Footmen, I confess to you, much less deserving them; Fellows without half your Charms: for such might almost excuse the Crime. Tell me therefore, *Joseph*, if I should admit you to such Freedom, what would you think of me?—tell me freely.’ ‘ Madam, said *Joseph*, I should think your Ladyship condescended a great deal below yourself.’ Pugh! said she, that I am to answer to myself: but would not you insist on more? Would you be contented with a Kiss? Would not your Inclinations be all on fire rather by such a Favour?’ Madam, said *Joseph*, if they were, I hope I should be able

‘ to



J. Hulett inv. et sculp. Published. March 1.st 1742/3 by. A. Miller.



‘ to controul them, without suffering them to get the better of my Virtue.’—You have heard, Reader, Poets talk of the *Statue of Surprize*; you have heard likewise, or else you have heard very little, how Surprize made one of the Sons of *Cræsus* speak tho’ he was dumb. You have seen the Faces, in the Eighteen-penny Gallery, when through the Trap-Door, to soft or no Musick, Mr. *Bridgwater*, Mr. *William Mills*, or some other of ghostly Appearance, hath ascended with a Face all pale with Powder, and a Shirt all bloody with Ribbons; but from none of these, nor from *Phidias*, or *Praxiteles*, if they should return to Life—no, not from the inimitable Pencil of my Friend *Hogarth*, could you receive such an Idea of Surprize, as would have entered in at your Eyes, had they beheld the Lady *Booby*, when those last Words issued out from the Lips of *Joseph*.—

‘ Your Virtue! (said the Lady recovering after a Silence of two Minutes) I shall never survive it. Your Virtue! Intolerable Confidence! Have you the Assurance to pretend, that when a Lady demeans herself to throw aside the Rules of Decency, in order to honour you with the highest Favour in her Power, your Virtue should resist her Inclination? That when she had conquered her own Virtue, she should find an Obstruction in yours?’ ‘ Madam, said *Joseph*, I can’t see why her having no Virtue should be a Reason against my having any: Or why, because I am a Man, or because I am poor, my Virtue must be subservient to her Pleasures.’ ‘ I am out of Patience,’ cries the Lady: ‘ Did ever Mortal hear of a Man’s Virtue! Did ever the greatest, or the gravest Men pretend to any of

‘ this Kind ! Will Magistrates who punish Lewd-
‘ ness, or Parsons, who preach against it, make
‘ any scruple of committing it ? And can a Boy,
‘ a Stripling, have the Confidence to talk of his
‘ Virtue ? ’ ‘ Madam, says *Joseph*, that Boy is the
‘ Brother of *Pamela*, and would be ashamed, that
‘ the Chastity of his Family, which is preserved
‘ in her, should be stained in him. If there are
‘ such Men as your Ladyship mentions, I am
‘ sorry for it ; and I wish they had an Opportu-
‘ nity of reading over those Letters, which my
‘ Father hath sent me of my Sister *Pamela*’s ; nor
‘ do I doubt but such an Example would amend
‘ them.’ ‘ You impudent Villain, cries the Lady
‘ in a Rage, do you insult me with the Follies of
‘ my Relation, who hath exposed himself all over
‘ the Country upon your Sister’s account ? a little
‘ Vixen, whom I have always wondered my late
‘ Lady *John Booby* ever kept in her House. Sir-
‘ rah ! get out of my Sight, and prepare to set
‘ out this Night ; for I will order you your Wa-
‘ ges immediately, and you shall be stripped and
‘ turned away.’ — ‘ Madam, says *Joseph*, I am
‘ sorry I have offended your Ladyship, I am sure I
‘ never intended it.’ ‘ Yes, Sirrah, cries she,
‘ you have had the Vanity to misconstrue the
‘ little innocent Freedom I took in order to try,
‘ whether what I had heard was true. O’ my
‘ Conscience, you have had the Assurance to ima-
‘ gine, I was fond of you myself.’ *Joseph* an-
‘ swered, he had only spoke out of Tenderness for
‘ his Virtue ; at which Words she flew into a vio-
‘ lent Passion, and, refusing to hear more, ordered
‘ him instantly to leave the Room.

He

He was no sooner gone, than she burst forth into the following Exclamation: ‘Whither doth this violent Passion hurry us? What Meanings do we submit to from its Impulse? Wisely we resist its first and least Approaches; for it is then only we can assure ourselves the Victory. No Woman could ever safely say, *so far only will I go*. Have I not exposed myself to the Refusal of my Footman? I cannot bear the Reflection.’ Upon which she applied herself to the Bell, and rung it with infinite more Violence than was necessary; the faithful *Slipslop* attending near at hand: To say the truth, she had conceived a Suspicion at her last Interview with her Mistress; and had waited ever since in the Antichamber, having carefully applied her Ears to the Key-Hole during the whole time that the preceding Conversation passed between *Joseph* and the Lady.

C H A P. IX.

What passed between the Lady and Mrs. Slipslop, in which we prophesy there are some Strokes which every one will not truly comprehend at the first Reading.

‘**S**LIP SLOP, said the Lady, I find too much Reason to believe all thou hast told me of this wicked *Joseph*; I have determined to part with him instantly; so go you to the Steward, and bid him pay him his Wages.’ *Slipslop*, who had preserved hitherto a Distance to her Lady, rather out of Necessity than Inclination, and who

C 5

thought

thought the Knowledge of this Secret had thrown down all Distinction between them, answered her Mistress very pertly, 'She wished she knew her own Mind; and that she was certain she would call her back again, before she was got half way down Stairs.' The Lady replied, 'she had taken a Resolution, and was resolved to keep it.' 'I am sorry for it, cries *Slitstop*; 'and if I had known you would have punished the poor Lad so severely, you should never have heard a Particle of the Matter. Here's a Fuss indeed, about nothing.' 'Nothing!' returned my Lady; 'Do you think I will countenance Lewdness in my House?' 'If you will turn away every Footman,' said *Slitstop*, 'that is a Lover of the Sport, you must soon open the Coach-Door yourself, or get a Sett of *Mophrodites* to wait upon you; and I am sure I hated the Sight of them even singing in an Opera.' Do as I bid you,' says my Lady, 'and don't shock my Ears with your beastly Language.' 'Marry-come-up,' cries *Slitstop*, 'People's Ears are sometimes the nicest Part about them.'

The Lady, who began to admire the new Style in which her Waiting-Gentlewoman delivered herself, and by the Conclusion of her Speech, suspected somewhat of the Truth, called her back, and desired to know what she meant by the extraordinary Degree of Freedom in which she thought proper to indulge her Tongue. 'Freedom! says *Slitstop*, I don't know what you call Freedom, Madam; Servants have Tongues as well as their Mistresses.' 'Yes, and saucy ones too, answered the Lady: but I assure you I shall bear no such Impertinence.' 'Impertinence! I don't know that I am impertinent,

‘tinent,’ says *Slipslop*. ‘Yes indeed you are,’ cries my Lady; ‘and unless you mend your Manners, this House is no Place for you.’ Manners! cries *Slipslop*, I never was thought to want Manners *nor Modesty neither*; and for Places, there are more Places than one; and I know what I know.’ ‘What do you know, Mistress?’ answered the Lady. ‘I am not obliged to tell that to every Body, says *Slipslop*, any more than I am obliged to keep it a Secret.’ ‘I desire you would provide yourself,’ answered the Lady. ‘With all my Heart,’ replied the Waiting-Gentlewoman; and so departed in a Passion, and slapped the Door after her.

The Lady too plainly perceived that her Waiting-Gentlewoman knew more than she would willingly have had her acquainted with; and this she imputed to *Joseph’s* having discovered to her what past at the first Interview. This therefore blew up her Rage against him, and confirmed her in a Resolution of parting with him.

But the dismissing Mrs. *Slipslop* was a Point not so easily to be resolved upon: she had the utmost Tendernefs for her Reputation, as she knew on that depended many of the most valuable Blessings of Life; particularly Cards, making Curt’sies in public Places, and above all, the Pleasure of demolishing the Reputations of others, in which innocent Amusement she had an extraordinary Delight. She therefore determined to submit to any Insult from a Servant, rather than run a Risque of losing the Title to so many great Privileges.

She therefore sent for her Steward, Mr. *Peter Pounce*; and ordered him to pay *Joseph* his Wages, to strip off his Livery, and turn him out of the House that Evening.

She then called *Slipslop* up, and after refreshing her Spirits with a small Cordial which she kept in her Closet, she began in the following manner :

‘ *Slipslop*, why will you, who know my passionate Temper, attempt to provoke me by your Answers? I am convinced you are an honest Servant, and should be very unwilling to part with you. I believe likewise you have found me an indulgent Mistress on many Occasions, and have as little Reason on your side to desire a Change. I can’t help being surprized therefore, that you will take the surest Method to offend me. I mean repeating my Words, which you know I have always detested.’

The prudent Waiting-Gentlewoman had duly weighed the whole Matter, and found on mature Deliberation, that a good Place in Possession was better than one in Expectation. As she found her Mistress therefore inclined to relent, she thought proper also to put on some small Condescension ; which was as readily accepted : and so the Affair was reconciled, all Offences forgiven, and a Present of a Gown and Petticoat made her as an Instance of her Lady’s future Favour.

She offered once or twice to speak in favour of *Joseph* : but found her Lady’s Heart so obdurate, that she prudently dropt all such Efforts. She considered there were more Footmen in the House, and some as stout Fellows, tho’ not quite so handsome as *Joseph* : besides, the Reader hath already seen her tender Advances had not met with the Encouragemet she might have reasonably expected. She thought she had thrown away a great deal of Sack and Sweat-meats on an ungrateful Rascal ;

and being a little inclined to the Opinion of that female Sect, who hold one lusty young Fellow to be near as good as another lusty young Fellow, she at last gave up *Joseph* and his Cause, and with a Triumph over her Passion highly commendable, walked off with her Present, and with great Tranquility paid a Visit to a Stone-Bottle, which is of sovereign Use to a Philosophical Temper.

She left not her Mistress so easy. The poor Lady could not reflect, without Agony, that her dear Reputation was in the Power of her Servants. All her Comfort, as to *Joseph*, was, that she hoped he did not understand her Meaning; at least, she could say for herself, she had not plainly express'd any thing to him; and as to Mrs. *Slipshod*, she imagined she could bribe her to Secrecy.

But what hurt her most was, that in reality she had not so entirely conquered her Passion; the little God lay lurking in her Heart, tho' Anger and Disdain so hoodwinked her, that she could not see him. She was a thousand times on the very Brink of revoking the Sentence she had passed against the poor Youth. Love became his Advocate, and whispered many things in his Favour. Honour likewise endeavoured to vindicate his Crime, and Pity to mitigate his Punishment; on the other side, Pride and Revenge spoke as loudly against him; and thus the poor Lady was tortured with Perplexity, opposite Passions distracting and tearing her Mind different Ways.

So have I seen, in the Hall of *Westminster*, where Serjeant *Bramble* hath been retained on the right Side, and Serjeant *Puzzle* on the left, the Balance of Opinion (so equal were their Fees) alternately incline to either Scale. Now *Bramble*
throws

throws in an Argument; and *Puzzle's* Scale strikes the Beam; again, *Bramble* shares the like Fate, overpowered by the Weight of *Puzzle*. Here *Bramble* hits, there *Puzzle* strikes; here one has you, there t'other has you; 'till at last all becomes one Scene of Confusion in the tortured Minds of the Hearers; equal Wagers are laid on the Success, and neither Judge nor Jury can possibly make any thing of the Matter; all Things are so enveloped by the careful Serjeants in Doubt and Obscurity.

Or as it happens in the Conscience, where Honour and Honesty pull one way, and a Bribe and Necessity another.—If it was our present Business only to make Similies, we could produce many more to this Purpose: but a Similie (as well as a Word) to the Wife. We shall therefore see a little after our Hero, for whom the Reader is doubtless in some Pain.

C H A P. X.

Joseph writes another Letter: His Transactions with Mr. Peter Pounce, &c. with his Departure from Lady Booby.

THE disconsolate *Joseph* would not have had an Understanding sufficient for the principal Subject of such a Book as this; if he had any longer misunderstood the Drift of his Mistress; and indeed that he did not discern it sooner, the Reader will be pleased to apply to an Unwillingness in him to discover what he must condemn in her as a Fault. Having therefore quitted her Presence, he retired into his own Garret, and entered himself

self into an Ejaculation on the numberless Calamities which attended Beauty, and the Misfortune it was to be handsomer than one's Neighbours.

He then sat down and addressed himself to his Sister *Pamela*, in the following Words:

Dear Sister *Pamela*,

HOPING you are well, what News have I to tell you! O *Pamela*, my Mistress is fallen in love with me—That is, what great Folks call falling in love, she has a mind to ruin me; but I hope, I shall have more Resolution and more Grace than to part with my Virtue to any Lady upon Earth.

Mr. Adams hath often told me, that Chastity is as great a Virtue in a Man as in a Woman. He says he never knew any more than his Wife, and I shall endeavour to follow his Example. Indeed, it is owing entirely to his excellent Sermons and Advice, together with your Letters, that I have been able to resist a Temptation, which he says no Man complies with, but he repents in this World, or is damned for it in the next; and why should I trust to Repentance on my Death-bed, since I may die in my Sleep? What fine things are good Advice and good Examples! But I am glad she turned me out of the Chamber as she did: for I had once almost forgotten every Word *Parson Adams* had ever said to me.

I don't doubt, dear Sister, but you will have Grace to preserve your Virtue against all Trials; and I beg you earnestly to pray, I may be enabled to preserve mine: for truly it is very severely attacked by more than one: but, I hope I shall copy your Example, and that of *Joseph*, my Name sake; and maintain my Virtue against all Temptations.

Joseph

Joseph had not finished his Letter, when he was summoned down stairs by Mr. *Peter Pounce*, to receive his Wages: for, besides that out of eight Pounds a Year he allowed his Father and Mother four, he had been obliged, in order to furnish himself with musical Instruments, to apply to the Generosity of the aforesaid *Peter*, who, on urgent Occasions, used to advance the Servants their Wages: not before they were due, but before they were payable; that is, perhaps, half a Year after they were due, and this at the moderate *Præmium* of fifty *per Cent.* or a little more; by which charitable Methods, together with lending Money to other People, and even to his own Master and Mistress, the honest Man had, from nothing, in a few Years amassed a small Sum of twenty thousand Pounds or thereabouts.

Joseph having received his little Remainder of Wages, and having stript off his Livery, was forced to borrow a Frock and Breeches of one of the Servants: (for he was so beloved in the Family, that they would all have lent him any thing) and being told by *Peter*, that he must not stay a Moment longer in the House than was necessary to pack up his Linnen, which he easily did in a very narrow Compass; he took a melancholy Leave of his Fellow-Servants, and set out at seven in the Evening.

He had proceeded the Length of two or three Streets, before he absolutely determined with himself, whether he should leave the Town that Night, or procuring a Lodging, wait till the Morning. At last, the Moon shining very bright helped him to come to a Resolution of beginning his Journey immediately, to which likewise he
had

had some other Inducements; which the Reader, without being a Conjuror, cannot possibly guess, till we have given him those Hints, which it may be now proper to open.

CHAP. XI.

Of several new Matters not expected.

IT is an Observation sometimes made, that to indicate our Idea of a simple Fellow; we say, *He is easily to be seen through*: Nor do I believe it a more improper Denotation of a simple Book. Instead of applying this to any particular Performance, we chuse rather to remark the contrary in this History, where the Scene opens itself by small Degrees; and he is a sagacious Reader who can see two Chapters before him.

For this reason, we have not hitherto hinted a Matter which now seems necessary to be explained; since it may be wondered at, first, that *Joseph* made such extraordinary haste out of Town; which hath been already shewn; and secondly, which will be now shewn, that instead of proceeding to the Habitation of his Father and Mother, or to his beloved Sister *Pamela*, he chose rather to set out full speed to the Lady *Booby's* Country Seat, which he had left on his Journey to *London*.

Be it known then, that in the same Parish where this Seat stood, there lived a young Girl whom *Joseph* (tho' the best of Sons and Brothers) longed more impatiently to see than his Parents or his Sister. She was a poor Girl, who had formerly been bred up in Sir *John's* Family; whence, a little before the Journey to *London*, she

she had been discarded by Mrs. *Slipshod* on account of her extraordinary Beauty: for I never could find any other Reason.

This young Creature (who now lived with a Farmer in the Parish) had been always beloved by *Joseph*, and returned his Affection. She was two Years only younger than our Hero. They had been acquainted from their Infancy, and had conceived a very early liking for each other, which had grown to such a Degree of Affection, that Mr. *Adams* had with much ado prevented them from marrying; and persuaded them to wait, till a few Years Service and Thrift had a little improved their Experience, and enabled them to live comfortably together.

They followed this good Man's Advice, as indeed his Word was little less than a Law in his Parish: for as he had shewn his Parishioners by an uniform Behaviour of thirty-five Years duration, that he had their Good entirely at heart; so they consulted him on every Occasion, and very seldom acted contrary to his Opinion.

Nothing can be imagined more tender than was the Parting between these two Lovers. A thousand Sighs heaved the Bosom of *Joseph*; a thousand Tears distilled from the lovely Eyes of *Fanny*, (for that was her Name) tho' her Modesty would only suffer her to admit his eager Kisses, her violent Love made her more than passive in his Embraces; and she often pulled him to her Breast with a soft Pressure, which, tho' perhaps it would not have squeezed an Insect to Death, caused more Emotion in the Heart of *Joseph*, than the closest *Cornish* Hug could have done.

The Reader may perhaps wonder, that so fond a Pair should during a Twelve-month's Absence never

never converse with one another; indeed there was but one Reason which did, or could have prevented them; and this was, that poor *Fanny* could neither write nor read; nor could she be prevailed upon to transmit the Delicacies of her tender and chaste Passion, by the Hands of an *Amanuensis*.

They contented themselves therefore with frequent Enquiries after each other's Health, with a mutual Confidence in each other's Fidelity, and the Prospect of their future Happiness.

Having explained these Matters to our Reader, and, as far as possible, satisfied all his Doubts, we return to honest *Joseph*, whom we left just set out on his Travels by the Light of the Moon.

Those who have read any Romance or Poetry antient or modern, must have been informed, that Love hath Wings; by which they are not to understand, as some young Ladies by Mistake have done, that a Lover can fly; the Writers, by this ingenious Allegory, intending to insinuate no more, than that Lovers do not march like Horse-Guards; in short, that they put the best Leg foremost; which our lusty Youth, who could walk with any Man, did so heartily on this Occasion, that within four Hours, he reached a famous House of Hospitality well known to the Western Traveller. It presents you a Lion on the Sign-Post: and the Master, who was christened *Timotheus*, is commonly called plain *Tim*. Some have conceived that he hath particularly chosen the Lion for his Sign, as he doth in Countenance greatly resemble that magnanimous Beast, tho' his Disposition favours more of the Sweetness of the Lamb. He is a Person well received among all sorts of Men, being qualified to render

der himself agreeable to any ; as he is well versed in History and Politics, hath a smattering in Law and Divinity, cracks a good Jest, and plays wonderfully well on the *French Horn*.

A violent Storm of Hail forced *Joseph* to take Shelter in this Inn, where he remembered Sir *Thomas* had dined in his way to Town. *Joseph* had no sooner seated himself by the Kitchen-Fire, than *Timotheus*, observing his Livery, began to condole the Loss of his late Master ; who was, he said, his very particular and intimate Acquaintance, with whom he had cracked many a merry Bottle, aye many a dozen in his Time. He then remarked, that all those Things were over now, all past, and just as if they had never been ; and concluded with an excellent Observation on the Certainty of Death, which his Wife said was indeed very true. A Fellow now arrived at the same Inn with two Horses, one of which he was leading farther down into the Country to meet his Master ; these he put into the Stable, and came and took his Place by *Joseph's* Side, who immediately knew him to be the Servant of a neighbouring Gentleman, who used to visit at their House.

This Fellow was likewise forced in by the Storm ; for he had Orders to go twenty Miles farther that Evening, and luckily on the same Road which *Joseph* himself intended to take. He therefore embraced this Opportunity of complimenting his Friend with his Master's Horses, (notwithstanding he had received express Commands to the contrary) which was readily accepted ; and so after they had drank a loving Pot, and the Storm was over, they set out together.

C H A P. XII.

Containing many surprizing Adventures which Joseph Andrews met with on the Road, scarce credible to those who have never travelled in a Stage-Coach.

Nothing remarkable happened on the Road, till their Arrival at the Inn to which the Horses were ordered; whither they came about two in the Morning. The Moon then shone very bright; and *Joseph* making his Friend a Present of a Pint of Wine, and thanking him for the Favour of his Horse, notwithstanding all Entreaties to the contrary, proceeded on his Journey on Foot.

He had not gone above two Miles, charmed with the Hopes of shortly seeing his beloved *Fanny*, when he was met by two Fellows in a narrow Lane, and ordered to stand and deliver. He readily gave them all the Money he had, which was somewhat less than two Pounds; and told them he hoped they would be so generous as to return him a few Shillings, to defray his Charges on his Way home.

One of the Ruffians answered with an Oath, *Yes, we'll give you something presently: but first strip and be d—n'd to you.—Strip*, cry'd the other, *or I'll blow your Brains to the Devil.* *Joseph*, remembering that he had borrowed his Coat and Breeches of a Friend, and that he should be ashamed of making any Excuse for not returning them, replied, he hoped they would not insist on his Clothes, which were not worth much,
but

consider the Coldness of the Night. *You are cold, are you, you Rascal!* says one of the Robbers, *I'll warm you with a Vengeance;* and, damning his Eyes, snapt a Pistol at his Head: which he had no sooner done, than the other levell'd a Blow at him with his Stick, which *Joseph*, who was expert at Cudgel-playing, caught with his, and returned the Favour so successfully on his Adversary, that he laid him sprawling at his Feet, and at the same Instant received a Blow from behind, with the Butt-end of a Pistol from the other Villain, which felled him to the Ground, and totally deprived him of his Senses.

The Thief, who had been knocked down, had now recovered himself; and both together fell to belabouring poor *Joseph* with their Sticks, till they were convinced they had put an End to his miserable Being: They then stript him entirely naked, threw him into a Ditch, and departed with their Booty.

The poor Wretch, who lay motionless a long time, just began to recover his Senses as a Stage-Coach came by. The Postilion hearing a Man's Groans, stopt his Horses, and told the Coachman, He was certain there was a *dead* Man lying in the Ditch; for he heard him groan. 'Go on, Sir-rah, says the Coachman, we are confounded late, and have no time to look after dead Men.' A Lady, who heard what the Postilion said, and likewise heard the Groan, called eagerly to the Coachman, To stop and see what was the Matter. Upon which he bid the Postilion alight, and look into the Ditch. He did so, and returned, 'That there was a Man sitting upright as naked as ever he was born.—O *J—sus*, cry'd the Lady, A naked Man! Dear Coachman, drive on and leave

‘leave him.’ Upon this the Gentlemen got out of the Coach; and *Joseph* begged them to have Mercy upon him: For that he had been robbed, and almost beaten to Death. ‘Robbed,’ cries an old Gentleman; ‘Let us make all the haste imaginable, or we shall be robbed too. A young Man, who belonged to the Law answered, ‘He wished they had passed by without taking any Notice: But that now they might be proved to have been *last in his Company*; if he should die, they might be called to some account for his Murder. He therefore thought it advisable to save the poor Creature’s Life, for their own sakes, if possible; at least, if he died, to prevent the Jury’s finding *that they fled for it*. He was therefore *of Opinion*, to take the Man into the Coach, and carry him to the next Inn.’ The Lady insisted, ‘That he should not come into the Coach. That if they lifted him in, she would herself alight: for she had rather stay in that Place to all Eternity, than ride with a naked Man.’ The Coachman objected, ‘That he could not suffer him to be taken in, unless somebody would pay a Shilling for his Carriage the four Miles. Which the two Gentlemen refused to do. But the Lawyer, who was afraid of some Mischief happening to himself if the Wretch was left behind in that Condition, saying, no Man could be too cautious in these Matters, and that he remembered very extraordinary Cases in the Books, threatened the Coachman, and bid him deny taking him up at his Peril; for that if he died, he should be indicted for his Murder; and if he lived, and brought an Action against him, he would willingly take a Brief in it. These Words had a sensible Effect on the Coachman, who was well acquainted with

with the Person who spoke them; and the old Gentleman abovementioned, thinking the naked Man would afford him frequent Opportunities of shewing his Wit to the Lady, offered to join with the Company in giving a Mug of Beer for his Fare; till partly alarmed by the Threats of the one, and partly by the Promises of the other, and being perhaps *a little* moved with Compassion at the poor Creature's Condition, who stood bleeding and shivering with the Cold, he at length agreed; and *Joseph* was now advancing to the Coach, where seeing the Lady, who held the Sticks of her Fan before her Eyes, he absolutely refused, miserable as he was, to enter, unless he was furnished with sufficient Covering, to prevent giving the least Offence to Decency. So perfectly modest was this young Man; such mighty Effects had the spotless Example of the amiable *Pamela*, and the excellent Sermons of Mr. *Adams* wrought upon him.

Though there were several Great Coats about the Coach, it was not easy to get over this Difficulty which *Joseph* had started. The two Gentlemen complained they were cold, and could not spare a Rag; the Man of Wit saying, with a Laugh, *that Charity began at home*; and the Coachman, who had two great Coats spread under him, refused to lend either, lest they should be made bloody; the Lady's Footman desired to be excused for the same Reason, which the Lady herself, notwithstanding her Abhorrence of a naked Man, approved: and it is more than probable, poor *Joseph*, who obstinately adhered to his modest Resolution, must have perished, unless the Postilion, (a Lad who hath been since transported for robbing a Hen-roost) had voluntarily stript off a great Coat,
his

his only Garment, at the same time swearing a great Oath (for which he was rebuked by the Passengers) ‘ That he would rather ride in his Shirt ‘ all his Life, than suffer a Fellow-Creature to ‘ lie in so miserable a Condition.’

Joseph, having put on the great Coat, was lifted into the Coach, which now proceeded on its Journey. He declared himself almost dead with the Cold, which gave the Man of Wit an occasion to ask the Lady, if she could not accommodate him with a Dram. She answered with some Resentment, ‘ She wondered at his asking her such ‘ a Question; but assured him she never tasted ‘ any such thing.’

The Lawyer was enquiring into the Circumstances of the Robbery, when the Coach stopt, and one of the Ruffians putting a Pistol in, demanded their Money of the Passengers; who readily gave it them; and the Lady, in her Fright, delivered up a little silver Bottle, of about a half-pint Size, which the Rogue, clapping it to his Mouth, and drinking her Health, declared held some of the best *Nantes* he had ever tasted: this the Lady afterwards assured the Company was the Mistake of her Maid; for that she had ordered her to fill the Bottle with *Hungary Water*.

As soon as the Fellows were departed, the Lawyer, who had, it seems, a Case of Pistols in the Seat of the Coach, informed the Company, that if it had been Day-light, and he could have come at his Pistols, he would not have submitted to the Robbery; he likewise set forth, that he had often met Highwaymen when he travelled on Horseback, but none ever durst attack him; concluding, that if he had not been

D

more

more afraid for the Lady than for himself, he should not have now parted with his Money so easily.

As Wit is generally observed to love to reside in empty Pockets; so the Gentleman, whose Ingenuity we have above remark'd, as soon as he had parted with his Money, began to grow wonderfully facetious. He made frequent Allusions to *Adam* and *Eve*, and said many excellent Things on Figs and Fig-Leaves; which perhaps gave more Offence to *Joseph* than to any other in the Company.

The Lawyer likewise made several very pretty Jest, without departing from his Profession. He said, 'If *Joseph* and the Lady were alone, ' he would be more capable of making a *Convey-
' ance* to her, as his *Affairs* were not *fettered*
' with any *Incumbrance*; he'd warrant, he soon
' suffered a *Recovery* by a Writ of *Entry*, which
' was the proper Way to create *Heirs in Tail*;
' that for his own part, he would engage to make
' so *firm a Settlement* in a Coach, that there
' should be no Danger of an *Ejectment*;' with an Inundation of the like Gibberish, which he continued to vent till the Coach arrived at an Inn, where one Servant-Maid only was up in readiness to attend the Coachman, and furnish him with cold Meat and a Dram. *Joseph* desired to alight, and that he might have a Bed prepared for him, which the Maid readily promised to perform; and being a good-natur'd Wench, and not so squeamish as the Lady had been, she clapt a large Faggot on the Fire, and furnishing *Joseph* with a great Coat belonging to one of the Hostlers, desired him to sit down and warm himself, whilst she made his Bed. The Coachman, in the mean
time,

time, took an Opportunity to call up a Surgeon, who lived within a few Doors : after which, he reminded his Passengers how late they were, and after they had taken Leave of *Joseph*, hurried them off as fast as he could.

The Wench soon got *Joseph* to Bed, and promised to use her Interest to borrow him a Shirt ; but imagined, as she afterwards said, by his being so bloody, that he must be a dead Man : she ran with all speed to hasten the Surgeon, who was more than half drest, apprehending that the Coach had been overturned and some Gentleman or Lady hurt. As soon as the Wench had informed him at his Window, that it was a poor Foot Passenger who had been stripped of all he had, and almost murdered ; he chid her for disturbing him so early, slipped off his Clothes again, and very quietly returned to Bed and to sleep.

Aurora now began to shew her blooming Cheeks over the Hills, whilst ten Millions of feathered Songsters, in jocund Chorus, repeated Odes a thousand times sweeter than those of our *Laureat*, and sung both *the Day and the Song* ; when the Master of the Inn, Mr. *Tow-wouse*, arose, and learning from his Maid an Account of the Robbery, and the Situation of his poor naked Guest, he shook his Head, and cried, *Good-lack-a-day!* and then ordered the Girl to carry him one of his own Shirts.

Mrs. *Tow-wouse* was just awake, and had stretched out her Arms in vain to fold her departed Husband, when the Maid entered the Room. 'Who's there? *Betty*? 'Yes Madam.' 'Where's your Master?' He's without, Madam; he hath sent me for a Shirt to lend a poor naked

‘ Man, who hath been robbed and murdered.’
‘ Touch one, if you dare, you Slut,’ said Mrs. *Tow-wouse* ; ‘ your Master is a pretty sort of a
‘ Man to take in naked Vagabonds, and clothe
‘ them with his own Clothes. I shall have no
‘ such Doings.—If you offer to touch any thing,
‘ I will throw the Chamber-Pot at your Head.
‘ Go, send your Master to me.’ ‘ Yes Madam,’
answered *Betty*. As soon as he came in, she thus
began : ‘ What the Devil do you mean by this,
‘ Mr. *Tow-wouse* ? Am I to buy Shirts to lend
‘ to a Set of scabby Rascals ?’ ‘ My Dear, said
‘ Mr. *Tow-wouse*, this is a poor Wretch.’ ‘ Yes,
‘ says she, I know it is a poor Wretch ; but what
‘ the Devil have we to do with poor Wretches ?
‘ The Law makes us provide for too many al-
‘ ready. We shall have thirty or forty poor
‘ Wretches in red Coats shortly.’ ‘ My Dear,
‘ cries *Tow-wouse*, this Man hath been robbed
‘ of all he hath.’ ‘ Well then, says she, where’s
‘ his Money to pay his Reckoning ? Why doth
‘ not such a Fellow go to an Ale-house ? I shall
‘ send him packing as soon as I am up, I assure
‘ you.’ ‘ My Dear, said he, common Charity
‘ won’t suffer you to do that.’ ‘ Common Cha-
‘ rity, a F—t ! says she, Common Charity teaches
‘ us to provide for ourselves, and our Families ;
‘ and I and mine wont be ruined by your Cha-
‘ rity, I assure you.’ ‘ Well, says he, my Dear,
‘ Do as you will when you are up ; you know I
‘ never contradict you.’ No, says she, if the
‘ Devil was to contradict me, I would make the
‘ House too hot to hold him.’

With such like Discourses they consumed near
half an Hour, whilst *Betty* provided a Shirt from
the Hostler, who was one of her Sweethearts,
and

and put it on poor *Joseph*. The surgeon had likewise at last visited him, and washed and dressed his Wounds, and was now come to acquaint Mr. *Tow-wouse*, that his Guest was in such extreme Danger of his Life, that he scarce saw any Hopes of his Recovery.—‘Here’s a pretty Kettle of Fish, cries Mrs. *Tow-wouse*, you have brought upon us! We are like to have a Funeral at our own Expence.’ *Tow-wouse*, (who notwithstanding his Charity, would have given his Vote as freely as ever he did at an Election, that any other House in the Kingdom should have quiet Possession of his Guest) answered, ‘My Dear, I am not to blame: he was brought hither by the Stage-Coach; and *Betty* had put him to Bed before I was stirring.’ ‘I’ll *Betty* her,’ says she—At which, with half her Garments on, the other half under her Arm, she sallied out in quest of the unfortunate *Betty*, whilst *Tow-wouse* and the Surgeon went to pay a Visit to poor *Joseph*, and enquire into the Circumstances of this melancholy Affair.

C H A P. XIII.

What happened to Joseph during his Sickneſs at the Inn, with the curious Diſcourſe between him and Mr. Barnabas the Parſon of the Pariſh.

AS soon as *Joseph* had communicated a particular History of the Robbery, together with a ſhort Account of himſelf and his intended Journey, he asked the Surgeon, if he apprehended him to be in any Danger: To which

the Surgeon very honestly answered, ' He feared ' he was ; for that his Pulse was very exalted ' and feverish, and if his Fever should prove ' more than *Symptomatic*, it would be impossible to save him.' *Joseph* fetching a deep Sigh, cried, ' *Poor Fanny, I would I could have lived to see thee ! but God's Will be done.*'

The Surgeon then advised him, If he had any worldly Affairs to settle, that he would do it as soon as possible ; for tho' he hoped he might recover, yet he thought himself obliged to acquaint him he was in great Danger ; and if the malign Concoction of his Humours should cause a Suscitation of his Fever, he might soon grow delirious and incapable to make his Will. *Joseph* answered, ' That it was impossible for any ' Creature in the Universe to be in a poorer Condition than himself : for since the Robbery, he ' had not one thing of any Kind whatever, which ' he could call his own.' *I had*, said he, *a poor little Piece of Gold which they took away, that would have been a Comfort to me in all my Afflictions ; but surely, Fanny, I want nothing to remind me of thee. I have thy dear Image in my Heart, and no Villain can ever tear it thence.*

Joseph desired Paper and Pens to write a Letter, but they were refused him ; and he was advised to use all his Endeavours to compose himself. They then left him ; and Mr. *Tow-wouse* sent to a Clergyman to come and administer his good Offices to the Soul of poor *Joseph*, since the Surgeon despaired of making any successful Applications to his Body.

Mr. *Barnabas* (for that was the Clergyman's Name) came as soon as sent for ; and having first drank a Dish of Tea with the Landlady, and after-

afterwards a Bowl of Punch with the Landlord, he walked up to the Room where *Joseph* lay : but, finding him asleep, returned to take the other Sneaker ; which when he had finished, he again crept softly up to the Chamber-Door, and, having opened it, heard the sick Man talking to himself in the following Manner :

‘ O most adorable *Pamela* ! most virtuous Sister ! whose Example could alone enable me to
 ‘ withstand all the Temptations of Riches and
 ‘ Beauty, and to preserve my Virtue pure and
 ‘ chaste, for the Arms of my dear *Fanny*, if it
 ‘ had pleased Heaven that I should ever have come
 ‘ unto them. What Riches, or Honours, or Plea-
 ‘ sures can make us amends for the Loss of Inno-
 ‘ cence ? Doth not that alone afford us more Con-
 ‘ solation, than all worldly Acquisitions ? What
 ‘ but Innocence and Virtue could give any Com-
 ‘ fort to such a miserable Wretch as I am ? Yet
 ‘ these can make me prefer this sick and painful
 ‘ Bed to all the Pleasures I should have found in
 ‘ my Lady’s. These can make me face Death
 ‘ without Fear ; and though I love my *Fanny*
 ‘ more than ever Man loved a Woman, these
 ‘ can teach me to resign myself to the Divine
 ‘ Will without repining. O, thou delightful
 ‘ charming Creature ! if Heaven had indulged
 ‘ thee to my Arms, the poorest, humblest State,
 ‘ would have been a Paradise ; I could have lived
 ‘ with thee in the lowest Cottage, without envy-
 ‘ ing the Palaces, the Dainties, or the Riches of
 ‘ any Man breathing. But I must leave thee, leave
 ‘ thee for ever, my dearest Angel ! I must think
 ‘ of another World ; and I heartily pray thou
 ‘ may’st meet Comfort in this.’--*Barnabas* thought
 he had heard enough ; so down stairs he went,

and told *Tew-wouse* he could do his Guest no Service : for that he was very light-headed, and had uttered nothing but a Rhapsody of Nonsense all the time he stayed in the Room.

The Surgeon returned in the Afternoon, and found his Patient in a higher Fever, as he said, than when he left him, though not delirious : for notwithstanding Mr. *Barnabas's* Opinion, he had not been once out of his Senses since his Arrival at the Inn.

Mr. *Barnabas* was again sent for, and with much Difficulty prevailed on to make another Visit. As soon as he entered the Room, he told *Joseph*, ‘ He was come to pray by him, and to prepare him for another World : In the first place therefore; he hoped he had repented of all his Sins.’ *Joseph* answered, ‘ He hoped he had : but there was one thing which he knew not whether he should call a Sin ; if it was, he feared he should die in the Commission of it ; and that was the Regret of parting with a young Woman, whom he loved as tenderly as he did his Heart-strings.’ *Barnabas* bad him be assured, that any Repining at the Divine Will was one of the greatest Sins he could commit ; that he ought to forget all carnal Affections, and think of better things.’ *Joseph* said, ‘ That neither in this World nor the next, he could forget his *Fanny* ; and that the Thought, however grievous, of parting from her for ever, was not half so tormenting, as the Fear of what she would suffer, when she knew his Misfortune.’ *Barnabas* said, ‘ That such Fears argued a Diffidence and Despondence very criminal ; that he must divest himself of all human Passions, and fix his Heart above.’ *Joseph* answered, ‘ That was what he
‘ desired

‘ desired to do, and should be obliged to him, if
 ‘ he would enable him to accomplish it.’ *Barnabas* replied, ‘ That must be done by Grace.’ *Joseph* besought him to discover how he might attain it. *Barnabas* answered, ‘ By Prayer and Faith.’ He then questioned him concerning his Forgiveness of the Thieves. *Joseph* answered, ‘ He feared
 ‘ that was more than he could do : for nothing
 ‘ would give him more Pleasure than to hear they
 ‘ were taken.’ ‘ That,’ cries *Barnabas*, ‘ is for
 ‘ the sake of Justice.’ ‘ Yes,’ said *Joseph*, ‘ but
 ‘ if I was to meet them again, I am afraid I
 ‘ should attack them, and kill them too, if I
 ‘ could.’ ‘ Doubtless,’ answered *Barnabas*, ‘ it
 ‘ is lawful to kill a Thief: but can you say, you
 ‘ forgive them as a Christian ought?’ *Joseph* desired to know what that Forgiveness was. ‘ That
 ‘ is,’ answered *Barnabas*, ‘ to forgive them as—
 ‘ as—it is to forgive them as—in short it is to
 ‘ forgive them as a Christian.’ *Joseph* replied,
 ‘ He forgave them as much as he could.’ ‘ Well,
 ‘ well,’ said *Barnabas*, ‘ that will do.’ ‘ He then
 ‘ demanded of him, if he remembered any more
 ‘ Sins unrepented of; and if he did, he de-
 ‘ sired him to make haste and repent of them
 ‘ as fast as he could : that they might repeat over
 ‘ a few Prayers together. *Joseph* answered, ‘ He
 ‘ could not recollect any great Crimes he had been
 ‘ guilty of, and that those he had committed he
 ‘ was sincerely sorry for.’ *Barnabas* said that was
 enough, and then proceeded to Prayer with all the
 Expedition he was Master of; some Company
 then waiting for him below in the Parlour, where
 the Ingredients for Punch were all in Readiness;
 but no one would squeeze the Oranges till he
 came.

Joseph complained he was dry, and desired a little Tea; which *Barnabas* reported to Mrs. *Tow-wouse*, who answered, ‘ She had just done ‘ drinking it, and could not be slopping all day;’ but ordered *Betty* to carry him up some small Beer.

Betty obeyed her Mistress’s Commands; but *Joseph*, as soon as he had tasted it, said, he feared it would increase his Fever, and that he longed very much for Tea: To which the good-natured *Betty* answered, he should have Tea, if there was any in the Land; she accordingly went and bought him some herself, and attended him with it; where we will leave her and *Joseph* together for some time, to entertain the Reader with other Matters.

C H A P. XIV.

Being very full of Adventures, which succeeded each other at the Inn.

IT was now the Dusk of the Evening, when a grave Person rode into the Inn, and committing his Horse to the Hostler went directly into the Kitchen, and having called for a Pipe of Tobacco took his Place by the Fire-side; where several other Persons were likewise assembled.

The Discourse ran altogether on the Robbery which was committed the Night before, and on the poor Wretch, who lay above in the dreadful Condition, in which we have already seen him. Mrs. *Tow-wouse* said, ‘ She wondered what the ‘ devil *Tom Whipwell* meant by bringing such ‘ Guests to her House, when there were so many
Ale-

‘ Ale-houses on the Road proper for their Reception. But she assured him, if he died, the Parish should be at the Expence of the Funeral.’ She added, ‘ Nothing would serve the Fellow’s Turn but Tea, she would assure him.’ *Betty*, who was just returned from her charitable Office, answered, she believed he was a Gentleman, for she never saw a finer Skin in her Life. ‘ Pox on his Skin!’ replied *Mrs. Tow-wouse*, ‘ I suppose, that is all we are like to have for the Reckoning. I desire no such Gentlemen should ever call at the *Dragon*,’ (which it seems was the Sign of the Inn.)

The Gentleman lately arrived discovered a great deal of Emotion at the Distress of this poor Creature, whom he observed to be fallen not into the most compassionate Hands. And indeed, if *Mrs. Tow-wouse* had given no Utterance to the Sweetness of her Temper, Nature had taken such Pains in her Countenance, that *Hogarth* himself never gave more Expression to a Picture.

Her Person was short, thin, and crooked. Her Forehead projected in the middle, and thence descended in a Declivity to the Top of her Nose, which was sharp and red, and would have hung over her Lips, had not Nature turned up the end of it. Her Lips were two Bits of Skin, which, whenever she spoke, she drew together in a Purse. Her Chin was picked; and at the upper end of that Skin, which composed her Cheeks, stood two Bones, that almost hid a Pair of small red Eyes. Add to this a Voice most wonderfully adapted to the Sentiments it was to convey, being both loud and hoarse.

It is not easy to say, whether the Gentleman had conceived a greater Dislike for his Landlady,

or Compassion for her unhappy Guest. He enquired very earnestly of the Surgeon, who was now come into the Kitchen, Whether he had any Hopes of his Recovery ? he begged him to use all possible means towards it, telling him, ‘ it was the Duty of Men of all Professions, to apply their Skill *gratis* for the Relief of the Poor and Necessitous.’ The Surgeon answered, ‘ he should take proper Care : but he defied all the Surgeons in *London* to do him any good.’ ‘ Pray, Sir,’ said the Gentleman, ‘ What are his Wounds ?’—‘ Why, do you know any thing of Wounds ?’ says the Surgeon (winking upon Mrs. *Tow-wouse*) ‘ Sir, I have a small smattering in Surgery,’ answered the Gentleman. ‘ A smattering,—ho, ho, ho !’ said the Surgeon, ‘ I believe it is a smattering indeed.’

The Company were all attentive, expecting to hear the Doctor, who was what they call a dry Fellow, expose the Gentleman.

He began therefore with an Air of Triumph : ‘ I suppose, Sir, you have travelled.’ ‘ No really Sir,’ said the Gentleman. ‘ Ho ! then you have practised in the Hospitals perhaps.’—‘ No, Sir,’ Hum ! not that neither ? ‘ Whence, Sir, then, if I may be so bold to enquire, have you got your Knowledge in Surgery ?’ ‘ Sir,’ answered the Gentleman, ‘ I do not pretend to much ; but, the little I know I have from Books.’ ‘ Books !’ cries the Doctor,—‘ What I suppose you have read *Galen* and *Hippocrates* !’ ‘ No, Sir,’ said the Gentleman. ‘ How ! you understand Surgery,’ answers the Doctor, ‘ and not read *Galen* and *Hippocrates* !’ ‘ Sir,’ cries the other, ‘ I believe there are many Surgeons who have never read these Authors.’ ‘ I be-

‘ lieve so too,’ says the Doctor, ‘ more shame
 ‘ for them : but thanks to my Education, I have
 ‘ them by heart, and very seldom go without them
 ‘ both in my Pocket.’ ‘ They are pretty large
 ‘ Books,’ said the Gentleman. ‘ Aye, said the
 Doctor, ‘ I believe I know how large they are
 ‘ better than you.’ (At which he fell a winking,
 and the whole Company burst into a Laugh.)

The Doctor pursuing his Triumph asked the
 Gentleman, ‘ if he did not understand Physic as
 ‘ well as Surgery.’ Rather better,’ answered the
 ‘ Gentleman. ‘ Aye, like enough,’ cries the
 Doctor, with a Wink. ‘ Why, I know a little
 ‘ of Physic too.’ ‘ I wish I knew half so much,’
 said *Tow-wouse*, ‘ I’d never wear an Apron again.’
 ‘ Why, I believe, Landlord,’ cries the Doctor,
 ‘ there are few Men, tho’ I say it, within twelve
 ‘ Miles of the Place, that handle a Fever bet-
 ‘ ter.—*Veniente accurrite morbo* : That is my Me-
 ‘ thod.—I suppose, Brother, you understand *La-*
 ‘ *tin*?’ ‘ A little,’ says the Gentleman. ‘ Aye,
 ‘ and *Greek* now I’ll warrant you : *Ton dapomibo-*
 ‘ *minos polustofsoio Thalasses*. But I have almost
 ‘ forgot these things, I could have repeated *Homer*
 ‘ by heart once.’—Ifsags! the Gentleman has
 ‘ caught a *Traytor*,’ says Mrs. *Tow-wouse*; at
 which they all fell a laughing.

The Gentleman, who had not the least Affec-
 tion for joking, very contentedly suffered the
 Doctor to enjoy his Victory ; which he did with
 no small Satisfaction : and having sufficiently
 sounded his Depth, told him, ‘ he was thoroughly
 ‘ convinced of his great Learning and Abilities ;
 ‘ and that he would be obliged to him, if he
 ‘ would let him know his Opinion of his Patient’s
 ‘ Case above Stairs.’ ‘ Sir,’ says the Doctor, ‘ his
 ‘ Case

‘ Case is that of a dead Man—The Contusion on
‘ his Head has *perforated* the *internal Membrane* of
‘ the *Occiput*, and *divellicated* that *radical* small
‘ *minute* invifible *Nerve*, which *coheres* to the *Pe-*
‘ *ricranium* ; and this was attended with a Fever
‘ at firft *fympomatic*, then *pneumatic* ; and he is
‘ at length grown *delirius*, or delirious, as the
‘ *Vulgar* exprefs it.’

He was proceeding in this learned manner, when a mighty Noife interrupted him. Some young Fellows in the Neighbourhood had taken one of the Thieves, and were bringing him into the Inn. *Betty* ran up Stairs with this News to *Joseph* ; who begged they might fearch for a little Piece of broken Gold, which had a Ribband tied to it, and which he could swear to amongft all the Hoards of the richeft Men in the Univerfe.

Notwithftanding the Fellow’s perfifting in his Innocence, the Mob were very bufy in fearching him, and prefently among other things pulled out the Piece of Gold juft mentioned ; which *Betty* no fooner faw than fhe laid violent Hands on it, and conveyed it up to *Joseph*, who received it with Raptures of Joy, and hugging it in his Bosom declared, *he could now die contented*.

Within a few Minutes afterwards, came in fome other Fellows, with a Bundle which they had found in a Ditch, and which was indeed the Clothes which had been ftripped off from *Joseph*, and the other things they had taken from him.

The Gentleman no fooner faw the Coat, than he declared he knew the Livery ; and, if it had been taken from the poor Creature above Stairs, defired he might fee him : for that he was very
well

well acquainted with the Family to whom that Livery belonged.

He was accordingly conducted up by *Betty*: But what, Reader, was the Surprise on both sides, when he saw *Joseph* was the Person in Bed; and when *Joseph* discovered the Face of his good Friend Mr. *Abraham Adams*!

It would be impertinent to insert a Discourse which chiefly turned on the relation of Matters already well known to the Reader: for as soon as the Curate had satisfied *Joseph* concerning the perfect Health of his *Fanny*, he was on his side very inquisitive into all the Particulars which had produced this unfortunate Accident.

To return therefore to the Kitchen, where a great Variety of Company were now assembled from all the Rooms of the House, as well as the Neighbourhood: so much Delight do Men take in contemplating the Countenance of a Thief:

Mr. *Tow-wouse* began to rub his Hands with pleasure, at seeing so large an Assembly; who would, he hoped, shortly adjourn into several Apartments, in order to discourse over the Robbery, and drink a Health to all honest Men. But Mrs. *Tow-wouse*, whose Misfortune it was commonly to see Things a little perversely, began to rail at those who brought the Fellow into her House; telling her Husband, ‘they were very likely to thrive, who kept a House of Entertainment for Beggars and Thieves.’

The Mob had now finished their Search; and could find nothing about the Captive likely to prove any Evidence: for as to the Clothes, tho’ the Mob were very well satisfied with that Proof; yet, as the Surgeon observed, they could not convict him, because they were not found in his Custody;

Custody ; to which *Barnabas* agreed, and added, that these were *Bona Waviata*, and belonged to the Lord of the Manor.

‘ How, says the Surgeon, do you say these Goods belong to the Lord of the Manor ?’ ‘ I do,’ cried *Barnabas*. ‘ Then I deny it,’ says the Surgeon. ‘ What can the Lord of the Manor have to do in the Case ? Will any one attempt to persuade me that what a Man finds is not his own ?’ ‘ I have heard, (says an old Fellow in the Corner) Justice *Wife-one* say, that if every Man had his Right, whatever is found belongs to the King of *London*.’ ‘ That may be true, says *Barnabas*, in some sense : for the Law makes a difference between Things stolen, and things found : for a thing may be stolen that never is found ; and a thing may be found that never was stolen. Now Goods that are both stolen and found are *Waviata* ; and they belong to the Lord of the Manor.’ ‘ So the Lord of the Manor is the Receiver of stolen Goods,’ (says the Doctor) ; at which there was a universal Laugh, being first begun by himself.

While the Prisoner, by persisting in his Innocence, had almost (as there was no Evidence against him) brought over *Barnabas*, the Surgeon, *Tow-wouse*, and several others to his Side ; *Betty* informed them, that they had over-looked a little Piece of Gold, which she had carried up to the Man in bed ; and which he offered to swear to amongst a Million, aye, amongst ten Thousand. This immediately turned the Scale against the Prisoner ; and every one now concluded him guilty. It was resolved therefore, to keep him secured that Night, and early in the Morning to carry him before a Justice.

C H A P. XV.

Shewing how Mrs. Tow-wouse was a little mollified; and how officious Mr. Barnabas and the Surgeon were to prosecute the Thief: With a Dissertation accounting for their Zeal, and that of many other Persons not mentioned in this History.

BETTY told her Mistress, she believed the Man in Bed was a greater Man than they took him for: for, besides the extreme Whiteness of his Skin, and the Softness of his Hands, she observed a very great Familiarity between the Gentleman and him; and added, she was certain they were intimate Acquaintance, if not Relations.

This somewhat abated the Severity of Mrs. Tow-wouse's Countenance. She said, 'God forbid she should not discharge the Duty of a Christian, since the poor Gentleman was brought to her House. She had a natural Antipathy to Vagabonds: but could pity the Misfortunes of a Christian as soon as another.' Tow-wouse said, 'If the Traveller be a Gentleman, tho' he hath no Money about him now, we shall most likely be paid hereafter; so you may begin to score whenever you will.' Mrs. Tow-wouse answered, Hold your simple Tongue, and don't instruct me in my Business. I am sure I am sorry for the Gentleman's Misfortune with all my Heart; and I hope the Villain who hath used him so barbarously, will be hanged

‘ hanged. *Betty*, go, see what he wants. God
‘ forbid he should want any thing in my House.’

Barnabas and the Surgeon went up to *Joseph*,
to satisfy themselves concerning the Piece of
Gold. *Joseph* was with Difficulty prevailed upon
to shew it them; but would by no Entreaties
be brought to deliver it out of his own Possession.
He however attested this to be the same which
had been taken from him; and *Betty* was ready
to swear to the finding it on the Thief.

The only Difficulty that remained, was how
to produce this Gold before the Justice: for as
to carrying *Joseph* himself, it seemed impossible;
nor was there any great likelihood of obtaining
it from him: for he had fastened it with a Rib-
band to his Arm, and solemnly vowed, that no-
thing but irresistible Force should ever separate
them; in which Resolution, *Mr. Adams*, clench-
ing a Fist rather less than the Knuckle of an Ox,
declared he would support him.

A Dispute arose on this Occasion concerning
Evidence, not very necessary to be related here;
after which the Surgeon dress’d *Mr. Joseph’s*
Head; still persisting in the imminent Danger
in which his Patient lay; but concluding with
a very important Look, ‘ that he began to have
‘ some Hopes; that he should send him a *Sana-
‘ tive soporiferous Draught*, and would see him in
‘ the Morning.’ After which *Barnabas* and he
departed, and left *Mr. Joseph* and *Mr. Adams* to-
gether.

Adams informed *Joseph* of the occasion of this
Journey which he was making to *London*, name-
ly to publish three Volumes of Sermons; being
encouraged, he said, by an Advertisement lately
set forth by a Society of Bookfellers, who pro-
posed

posed to purchase any Copies offered to them, at a Price to be settled by two Persons: but tho' he imagined he should get a considerable Sum of Money on this occasion, which his Family were in urgent need of, he protested he would not leave *Joseph* in his present Condition: finally, he told him, ' he had nine Shillings and three-pence ' half-penny in his Pocket, which he was welcome ' to use as he pleased.'

This Goodness of *Parson Adams* brought Tears into *Joseph's* Eyes; he declared, he had now a ' second Reason to desire Life, that he might ' shew his Gratitude to such a Friend.' *Adams* bade him ' be chearful; for that he plainly saw ' the Surgeon, besides his Ignorance, desired to ' make a Merit of curing him, tho' the Wounds ' in his Head, he perceived, were by no means ' dangerous; that he was convinced he had no ' Fever, and doubted not but he would be able ' to travel in a Day or two.'

These Words infused a Spirit into *Joseph*; he said, ' he found himself very sore from the Bruises, ' but had no reason to think any of his Bones injured, or that he had received any Harm in ' his Inside; unless that he felt something very ' odd in his Stomach: but he knew not whether that might not arise from not having eaten ' one Morsel for above twenty-four Hours.' Being then asked if he had any Inclination to eat, he answered in the affirmative. Then *Parson Adams* desired him to name what he had the greatest Fancy for; whether a poached Egg, or Chicken-broth: he answered, ' he could eat both very ' well; but that he seemed to have the greatest ' Appetite for a piece of boiled Beef and Cabbage.'

Adams

Adams was pleased with so perfect a Confirmation that he had not the least Fever: but advised him to a lighter Diet, for that Evening. He accordingly eat either a Rabbit or a Fowl, I never could with any tolerable Certainty discover which; after this he was by Mrs. *Tow-wouse's* Order conveyed into a better Bed, and equipped with one of her Husband's Shirts.

In the Morning early, *Barnabas* and the Surgeon came to the Inn, in order to see the Thief conveyed before the Justice. They had consumed the whole Night in debating what Measures they should take to produce the piece of Gold in Evidence against him: for they were both extremely zealous in the Business, tho' neither of them were in the least interested in the Prosecution; neither of them had ever received any private Injury from the Fellow, nor had either of them ever been suspected of loving the Public well enough, to give them a Sermon or a Dose of Physic for nothing.

To help our Reader therefore as much as possible to account for this Zeal, we must inform him, that, as this Parish was so unfortunate as to have no Lawyer in it; there had been a constant Contention between the two Doctors, spiritual and physical, concerning their Abilities in a Science, in which, as neither of them professed it, they had equal Pretensions to dispute each other's Opinions. These Disputes were carried on with great Contempt on both Sides, and had almost divided the Parish; Mr. *Tow-wouse* and one half of the Neighbours inclining to the Surgeon, and Mrs. *Tow-wouse* with the other half to the Parson. The Surgeon drew his Knowledge from those inestimable Fountains, called the *Attorney's*

Packet-

Pocket-Companion, and Mr. *Jacob's Law-Tables*; *Barnabas* trusted entirely to *Wood's Institutes*. It happened on this Occasion, as was pretty frequently the Case, that these two learned Men differed about the Sufficiency of Evidence: the Doctor being of Opinion, that the Maid's Oath would convict the Prisoner without producing the Gold; the Parson, *à contra, totis viribus*. To display their Parts therefore before the Justice and the Parish was the sole Motive, which we can discover, to this Zeal, which both of them pretended to have for public Justice.

O Vanity! how little is thy Force acknowledged, or thy Operations discerned! How wantonly dost thou deceive Mankind under different Disguises! Sometimes thou dost wear the Face of Pity, sometimes of Generosity: nay, thou hast the Assurance even to put on those glorious Ornaments which belong only to heroic Virtue. Thou odious, deformed Monster! whom Priests have railed at, Philosophers despised, and Poets ridiculed: Is there a Wretch so abandon'd as to own thee for an Acquaintance in public? yet, how few will refuse to enjoy thee in private? nay, thou art the Pursuit of most Men through their Lives. The greatest Villainies are daily practiced to please thee: nor is the meanest Thief below, or the greatest Hero above thy Notice. Thy Embraces are often the sole Aim and sole Reward of the private Robbery, and the plundered Province. It is to pamper up thee, thou Harlot, that we attempt to withdraw from others what we do not want, or to withhold from them what they do. All our Passions are thy Slaves. Avarice itself is often no more than thy Hand-maid, and even Lust thy Pimp. The Bully
Fear,

Fear, like a Coward, flies before thee, and Joy and Grief hide their Heads in thy Presence.

I know thou wilt think, that whilst I abuse thee, I court thee; and that thy Love hath inspired me to write this sarcastical Panegyric on thee: but thou art deceived, I value thee not of a Farthing; nor will it give me any Pain, if thou shouldst prevail on the Reader to censure this Digression as arrant Nonsense: for know to thy Confusion, that I have introduced thee for no other Purpose than to lengthen out a short Chapter; and so I return to my History.

CHAP. XVI.

The Escape of the Thief. Mr. Adams's Disappointment. The Arrival of two very extraordinary Personages, and the Introduction of Parson Adams to Parson Barnabas.

B*arnabas* and the Surgeon being returned, as we have said, to the Inn, in order to convey the Thief before the Justice, were greatly concerned to find a small Accident had happened, which somewhat disconcerted them; and this was no other than the Thief's Escape, who had modestly withdrawn himself by Night, declining all Ostentation, and not chusing, in imitation of some great Men, to distinguish himself at the Expence of being pointed at.

When the Company had retired the Evening before, the Thief was detained in a Room where the Constable, and one of the young Fellows
who

who took him, were planted as his Guard. About the second Watch, a general Complaint of Drowth was made both by the Prisoner and his Keepers. Among whom it was at last agreed, that the Constable should remain on Duty, and the young Fellow call up the Tapster; in which Disposition the latter apprehended not the least Danger, as the Constable was well armed, and could besides easily summon him back to his Assistance, if the Prisoner made the least Attempt to gain his Liberty.

The young Fellow had not long left the Room, before it came into the Constable's Head, that the Prisoner might leap on him by surprize, and thereby, preventing him of the use of his Weapons, especially the long Staff in which he chiefly confided, might reduce the Success of a Struggle to an equal Chance. He wisely therefore, to prevent this Inconvenience, slipped out of the Room himself and locked the Door, waiting without with his Staff in his Hand, ready listd to fell the unhappy Prisoner, if by ill Fortune he should attempt to break out.

But human Life, as hath been discovered by some great Man or other, (for I would by no means be understood to affect the Honour of making any such Discovery) very much resembles a Game at *Chefs*: for as in the latter, while a Gamester is too attentive to secure himself very strongly on one side the Board, he is apt to leave an unguarded Opening on the other; so doth it often happen in Life; and so did it happen on this Occasion: for whilst the cautious Constable with such wonderful Sagacity had possessed himself of the Door, he most unhappily forgot the Window.

The

The Thief, who played on the other side, no sooner perceived this Opening, than he began to move that way ; and finding the Passage easy, he took with him the young Fellow's Hat ; and without any Ceremony stepped into the Street, and made the best of his Way.

The young Fellow returning with a double Mug of strong Beer, was a little surprized to find the Constable at the Door ; but much more so, when, the Door being opened, he perceived the Prisoner had made his Escape, and which way. He threw down the Beer, and without uttering any thing to the Constable, except a hearty Curse or two, he nimbly leapt out at the Window, and went again in pursuit of his Prey ; being very unwilling to lose the Reward which he had assured himself of.

The Constable hath not been discharged of Suspicion on this account : It hath been said, that not being concerned in the taking the Thief, he could not have been entitled to any part of the Reward, if he had been convicted ; that the Thief had several Guineas in his Pocket ; that it was very unlikely he should have been guilty of such an Oversight ; that his Pretence for leaving the Room was absurd ; that it was his constant Maxim, that a wise Man never refused Money on any Conditions ; that at every Election he always had sold his Vote to both Parties, &c.

But notwithstanding these and many other such Allegations, I am sufficiently convinced of his Innocence ; having been positively assured of it, by those who received their Informations from his own Mouth ; which, in the Opinion of some Moderns, is the best and indeed only Evidence.

All the Family were now up, and with many others assembled in the Kitchen, where Mr. *Tow-wouse* was in some Tribulation; the Surgeon having declared, that by Law, he was liable to be indicted for the Thief's Escape, as it was out of his House: He was a little comforted however by Mr. *Barnabas*'s Opinion, that as the Escape was by Night, the Indictment would not lie.

Mrs. *Tow-wouse* delivered herself in the following Words: 'Sure never was such a Fool as my Husband! would any other Person living have left a Man in the Custody of such a drunken, drowsy Blockhead as *Tom Suckbribe*;' (which was the Constable's Name) 'and if he could be indicted without any Harm to his Wife and Children, I should be glad of it.' (Then the Bell rung in *Joseph*'s Room) Why *Betty*, *John*, *Chamberlain*, where the Devil are you all? 'Have you no Ears, or no Conscience, not to tend the Sick better?—See what the Gentleman wants; why don't you go yourself, Mr. *Tow-wouse*? but any one may die for you; you have no more feeling than a Deal-Board. If a Man lived a Fortnight in your House without spending a Penny, you would never put him in mind of it. See whether he drinks Tea or Coffee for Breakfast.' 'Yes, my Dear,' cry'd *Tow-wouse*. She then asked the Doctor and Mr. *Barnabas* what Morning's Draught they chose, who answered, they had a Pot of *Syder-and* at the Fire; which we will leave them merry over, and return to *Joseph*.

He had rose pretty early this Morning: but tho' his Wounds were far from threatening any Danger, he was so sore with the Bruises, that it was impossible for him to think of undertaking a

Journey yet ; Mr. *Adams* therefore, whose Stock was visibly decreased with the Expences of Supper and Breakfast, and which could not survive that Day's Scoring, began to consider how it was possible to recruit it. At last he cry'd, ' He had ' luckily hit on a sure Method, and though it ' would oblige him to return himself home together with *Joseph*, it mattered not much.' He then sent for *Tow-wouse*, and taking him into another Room, told him, ' He wanted to borrow ' three Guineas, for which he would put ample ' Security into his Hands.' *Tow-wouse*, who expected a Watch, or Ring, or something of double the Value, answered, ' He believed he could furnish him.' Upon which *Adams*, pointing to his Saddle-Bag, told him with a Face and Voice full of Solemnity, ' that there were in that Bag no ' less than nine Volumes of Manuscript Sermons, ' as well worth a hundred Pound as a Shilling was ' worth twelve Pence, and that he would depofite ' one of the Volumes in his Hands by way of ' Pledge ; not doubting but that he would have ' the Honesty to return it on his Repayment of ' the Money : for otherwise he must be a very ' great Loser, seeing that every Volume would at ' least bring him ten Pounds, as he had been informed by a neighbouring Clergyman in the ' Country : for, said he, as to my own Part, ' having never yet dealt in Printing, I do not ' pretend to ascertain the exact Value of such ' things.'

Tow-wouse, who was a little surprized at the Pawn, said (and not without some Truth) ' That ' he was no Judge of the Price of such kind of ' Goods : and as for Money, he really was very ' short.' *Adams* answered, ' Certainly he would not

‘not scruple to lend him three Guineas, on what
 ‘was undoubtedly worth at least ten.’ The
 Landlord replied, ‘He did not believe he had so
 ‘much Money in the House, and besides he was
 ‘to make up a Sum. He was very confident the
 ‘Books were of much higher Value, and hear-
 ‘tily sorry it did not suit him.’ He then cried
 out, *Coming Sir!* though no body called; and
 ran down Stairs without any Fear of breaking his
 Neck.

Poor *Adams* was extremely dejected at this
 Disappointment, nor knew he what farther Stra-
 tagem to try. He immediately applied to his
 Pipe, his constant Friend and Comfort in his Af-
 flictions; and leaning over the Rails, he devoted
 himself to Meditation, assisted by the inspiring
 Fumes of Tobacco.

He had on a Night-Cap drawn over his Wig,
 and a short great Coat, which half-covered his
 Cassock; a Dress which, added to something co-
 mical enough in his Countenance, composed a Fi-
 gure likely to attract the Eyes of those who were
 not over-given to Observation.

Whilst he was smoaking his Pipe in this Po-
 stance, a Coach and Six, with a numerous Attend-
 ance, drove into the Inn. There alighted from
 the Coach a young Fellow, and a Brace of Point-
 ers, after which another young Fellow leapt from
 the Box, and shook the former by the Hand; and
 both, together with the Dogs, were instantly con-
 ducted by Mr. *Tow-wouse* into an Apartment;
 whither as they passed, they entertained them-
 selves with the following short facetious Dialogue.

‘You are a pretty Fellow for a Coachman,
 ‘*Jack!*’ says he from the Coach, ‘you had al-
 ‘most overturned us just now.’ ‘Pox take you,’

says the Coachman, 'If I had only broke your Neck, it would have been saving somebody else the trouble: but I should have been sorry for the Pointers.' 'Why you Son of a B—,' answered the other, 'if nobody could shoot better than you, the Pointers would be of no use.' 'D--n me,' says the Coachman, 'I will shoot with you, five Guineas a Shot.' 'You be hang'd,' says the other, 'for five Guineas you shall shoot at my A—.' 'Done,' says the Coachman, 'I'll pepper you better than ever you was peppered by *Jenny Bouncer*.' 'Pepper your Grandmother,' says the other, 'here's *Tow-wouse* will let you shoot at him for a Shilling a time.' 'I know his Honour better,' cries *Tow-wouse*, 'I never saw a surer shoot at a Partridge. Every Man misses now and then; but if I could shoot half as well as his Honour, I would desire no better Livelihood than I could get by my Gun.' 'Pox on you,' said the Coachman, 'you demolish more Game now than your Head's worth. There's a Bitch, *Tow-wouse*, by G— she never *blinked* * a Bird in her Life. 'I have a Puppy, not a Year old, shall hunt with her for a hundred,' cries the other Gentleman. 'Done,' says the Coachman, 'but you will be pox'd before you make the Bett.' 'If you have a Mind for a Bett, cries the Coachman, I will match my spotted Dog with your white Bitch for a hundred, play or pay.' 'Done,' says the other, 'and I'll run *Baldface* against *Slouch* with you for another.' 'No,' cries he from the Box, 'but I'll venture *Miss Jenny* against *Bald-*

* To *blink* is a Term used to signify the Dog's passing by a Bird without pointing at it.



J. Hulet in v^t et sculp. Published March 1.st 1742/3 by A. Millar.



‘*face*, or *Hannibal* either.’ ‘Go to the Devil,’ cries he from the Coach, ‘I will make every Bett your own way, to be sure ! I will match *Hannibal* with *Slouch* for a thousand, if you dare, and I say done first.’

They were now arrived, and the Reader will be very contented to leave them, and repair to the Kitchen, where *Barnabas*, the Surgeon, and an Exciseman were smoaking their Pipes over some *Syder-and*, and where the Servants, who attended the two noble Gentlemen we have just seen alight, were now arrived.

‘*Tom*,’ cries one of the Footmen, ‘there’s Parson *Adams* smoaking his Pipe in the Gallery.’ ‘Yes,’ says *Tom*, I pulled off my Hat to him, and the Parson spoke to me.’

‘Is the Gentleman a Clergyman then?’ says *Barnabas*, (for his Caslock had been tied up when first he arrived.) ‘Yes, Sir,’ answered the Footman, ‘and one there be but few like.’ ‘Aye,’ said *Barnabas*, ‘if I had known it sooner, I should have desired his Company ; I would always shew a proper Respect for the Cloth ; but what say you, Doctor, shall we adjourn into a Room, and invite him to take part of a Bowl of Punch?’

This Proposal was immediately agreed to, and executed ; and Parson *Adams* accepting the Invitation, much Civility passed between the two Clergymen, who both declared the great Honour they had for the Cloth. They had not been long together, before they entered into a Discourse on small Tithes, which continued a full Hour, without the Doctor or Exciseman’s having one Opportunity to offer a Word.

It was then proposed to begin a general Conversation, and the Exciseman opened on Foreign Affairs : but a Word unluckily dropping from one of them introduced a Dissertation on the Hardships suffered by the inferior Clergy ; which after a long Duration, concluded with bringing the nine Volumes of Sermons on the Carpet.

Barnabas greatly discouraged poor *Adams* ; he said, ‘ The Age was so wicked, that nobody read Sermons : Would you think it, Mr. *Adams*, (said he) I once intended to print a Volume of Sermons myself, and they had the Approbation of two or three Bishops : but what do you think a Bookseller offered me ? ’ ‘ Twelve Guineas perhaps (cried *Adams*.) ’ ‘ Not Twelve Pence, I assure you,’ answered *Barnabas* ; nay, the Dog refused me a Concordance in Exchange.— At last I offered to give him the printing them, for the sake of dedicating them to that very Gentleman who just now drove his own Coach into the Inn ; and I assure you he had the Impudence to refuse my Offer : by which means I lost a good Living, that was afterwards given away in Exchange for a Pointer, to one who— but I will not say any thing against the Cloth. So you may guess, Mr. *Adams*, what you are to expect ; for if Sermons would have gone down, I believe—I will not be vain : but to be concise with you, three Bishops said, they were the best that ever were writ : but indeed there are a pretty moderate Number printed already, and not all sold yet.’ — ‘ Pray Sir,’ said *Adams*, to what do you think the Numbers may amount to ? ’ ‘ Sir,’ answered *Barnabas*, ‘ a Bookseller told me, he believed five thousand Volumes at least.’ ‘ Five thousand ! quoth the Surgeon, what

‘ what can they be writ upon ? I remember,
‘ when I was a Boy, I used to read one *Tillotson’s*
‘ Sermons ; and I am sure, if a Man practised
‘ half so much as is in one of those Sermons, he
‘ will go to Heaven.’ ‘ Doctor,’ cried *Barnabas*, ‘ you have a prophane way of talking, for
‘ which I must reprove you. A Man can never
‘ have his Duty too frequently inculcated into
‘ him. And as for *Tillotson*, to be sure he was
‘ a good Writer, and said things very well : but
‘ Comparisons are odious ; another Man may
‘ write as well as he.—I believe there are some of
‘ my Sermons,’—and then he applied the Candle
to his Pipe.—‘ And I believe, there are some of
‘ my Discourses,’ cries *Adams*, ‘ which the Bi-
‘ shops would not think totally unworthy of being
‘ printed ; and I have been informed, I might
‘ procure a very large Sum (indeed an immense
‘ one) on them.’ ‘ I doubt that ;’ answered *Barnabas* : ‘ however, if you desire to make some
‘ Money of them, perhaps you may sell them by
‘ advertising the *Manuscript Sermons of a Clergy-*
‘ *man lately deceased, all warranted Originals, and*
‘ *never printed.* And now I think of it, I should
‘ be obliged to you, if there be ever a Funeral
‘ one among them, to lend it me : for I am this
‘ very Day to preach a Funeral Sermon ; for which
‘ I have not penned a Line, though I am to have
‘ a double Price.’ *Adams* answered, ‘ He had
‘ but one, which he feared would not serve his
‘ Purpose, being sacred to the Memory of a Ma-
‘ gistrate, who had exerted himself very singu-
‘ larly in the Preservation of the Morality of his
‘ Neighbours, insomuch that he had neither Ale-
‘ house, nor lewd Woman in the Parish where he
‘ lived.’—‘ No,’ replied *Barnabas*, ‘ that will

‘ not do quite so well ; for the Deceased upon
‘ whose Virtues I am to harangue, was a little
‘ too much addicted to Liquor, and publickly kept
‘ a Mistress. — I believe I must take a common
‘ Sermon, and trust to my Memory to introduce
‘ something handsome on him.’ -- ‘ To your In-
‘ vention rather,’ (said the Doctor) ‘ your Me-
‘ mory will be apter to put you out : for no Man
‘ living remembers any thing good of him.

With such kind of spiritual Discourse, they emptied the Bowl of Punch, paid their Reckoning, and separated : *Adams* and the Doctor went up to *Joseph* ; Parson *Barnabas* departed to celebrate the aforesaid Deceased, and the Exciseman descended into the Cellar to gage the Vessels.

Joseph was now ready to sit down to a Loin of Mutton, and waited for Mr. *Adams*, when he and the Doctor came in. The Doctor having felt his Pulse, and examined his Wounds, declared him much better, which he imputed to *that sanative soporiferous Draught*, a Medicine, ‘ whose Virtues,’ he said, ‘ were never to be sufficiently extolled :’ And great indeed they must be, if *Joseph* was so much indebted to them as the Doctor imagined ; since nothing more than those Effluvia, which escaped the Cork, could have contributed to his Recovery : for the Medicine had stood untouched in the Window ever since its Arrival.

Joseph passed that Day and the three following with his Friend *Adams*, in which nothing so remarkable happened as the swift Progress of his Recovery. As he had an excellent Habit of Body, his Wounds were now almost healed ; and his Bruises gave him so little Uneasiness, that he pressed Mr. *Adams* to let him depart, told him he
should

Ch. 16. JOSEPH ANDREWS, &c. 81

should never be able to return sufficient Thanks for all his Favours; but begged that he might no longer delay his Journey to *London*.

Adams, notwithstanding the Ignorance, as he conceived it, of Mr. *Tow-wouse*, and the Envy (for such he thought it) of Mr. *Barnabas*, had great Expectations from his Sermons: seeing therefore *Joseph* in so good a way, he told him he would agree to his setting out the next Morning in the Stage-Coach, that he believed he should have sufficient after the Reckoning paid, to procure him one Day's Conveyance in it, and afterwards he would be able to get on, on Foot, or might be favoured with a lift in some Neighbour's Waggon, especially as there was then to be a Fair in the Town whither the Coach would carry him, to which Numbers from his Parish resorted.—And as to himself, he agreed to proceed to the great City.

They were now walking in the Inn-Yard, when a fat, fair, short Person rode in, and alighting from his Horse, went directly up to *Barnabas*, who was smoaking his Pipe on a Bench. The Parson and the Stranger shook one another very lovingly by the Hand, and went into a Room together.

The Evening now coming on, *Joseph* retired to his Chamber, whither the good *Adams* accompanied him; and took this Opportunity to expatiate on the great Mercies God had lately shewn him, of which he ought not only to have the deepest inward Sense; but likewise to express outward Thankfulness for them. They therefore fell both on their Knees, and spent a considerable Time in Prayer and Thanksgiving.

They had just finished, when *Betty* came in and told Mr. *Adams*, Mr. *Barnabas* desired to

Speak to him on some Business of Consequence below Stairs. *Joseph* desired, if it was likely to detain him long, he would let him know it, that he might go to bed, which *Adams* promised, and in that Case, they wished one another good Night.

CHAP. XVII.

A pleasant Discourse between the two Parsons and the Bookseller, which was broke off by an unlucky Accident happening in the Inn, which produced a Dialogue between Mrs. Tow-wouse and her Maid of no gentle kind.

AS soon as *Adams* came into the Room, Mr. *Barnabas* introduced him to the Stranger, who was, he told him, a Bookseller, and would be as likely to deal with him for his Sermons as any Man whatever. *Adams*, saluting the Stranger, answered *Barnabas*, that he was very much obliged to him, that nothing could be more convenient; for he had no other Business to the great City, and was heartily desirous of returning with the young Man who was just recovered of his Misfortune. He then snapt his Fingers (as was usual with him) and took two or three Turns about the Room in an Extasy.—And to induce the Bookseller to be as expeditious as possible, as likewise to offer him a better Price for his Commodity, he assured them their Meeting was extremely lucky to himself: for that he had the most pressing Occasion for Money at that time, his own being almost spent, and having a Friend then

then in the same Inn who was just recovered from some Wounds he had received from Robbers, and was in a most indigent Condition. 'So that nothing,' says he, 'could be so opportune, for the supplying both our Necessities, as my making an immediate Bargain with you.'

As soon as he had seated himself, the Stranger began in these Words; 'Sir, I do not care absolutely to deny engaging in what my Friend Mr. *Barnabas* recommends: but Sermons are mere Drugs. The Trade is so vastly stocked with them, that really unless they come out with the Name of *Whitefield* or *Westly*, or some other such great Man, as a Bishop, or those sort of People, I don't care to touch, unless now it was a Sermon preached on the 30th of *January*, or we could say in the Title Page, published at the earnest Request of the Congregation, or the Inhabitants: but truly for a dry Piece of Sermons, I had rather be excused; especially as my Hands are so full at present. However, Sir, as Mr. *Barnabas* mentioned them to me, I will, if you please, take the Manuscript with me to Town, and send you my Opinion of it in a very short time.'

O, said *Adams*, if you desire it, I will read two or three Discourses as a Specimen. This *Barnabas*, who loved Sermons no better than a Grocer doth Figs, immediately objected to, and advised *Adams* to let the Bookseller have his Sermons; telling him, if he gave him a Direction, he might be certain of a speedy Answer: Adding, he need not scruple trusting them in his Possession. No, said the Bookseller, if it was a Play that had been acted twenty Nights together, I believe it would be safe.

Adams

Adams did not at all relish the last Expression; he said, he was sorry to hear Sermons compared to Plays. 'Not by me, I assure you, cry'd the Bookseller, tho' I don't know whether the licensing Act may not shortly bring them to the same Footing: but I have formerly known a hundred Guineas given for a Play—.' 'More shame for those who gave it,' cry'd *Barnabas*. 'Why so?' said the Bookseller, 'for they got hundreds by it.' 'But is there no Difference between conveying good or ill Instructions to Mankind?' said *Adams*; 'would not an honest Mind rather lose Money by the one, than gain it by the other?' If you can find any such, I will not be their Hinderance,' answered the Bookseller, 'but I think those Persons who get by preaching Sermons, are the properest to lose by printing them: for my part, the Copy that sells best, will be always the best Copy in my Opinion; I am no Enemy to Sermons but because they don't sell: for I would as soon print one of *Whitefield's*, as any Farce whatever.'

'Whoever prints such heterodox Stuff ought to be hanged,' says *Barnabas*. 'Sir, said he, turning to *Adams*, this Fellow's Writings (I know not whether you have seen them) are levelled at the Clergy. He would reduce us to the Example of the primitive Ages, forsooth! and would insinuate to the People, that a Clergyman ought to be always preaching and praying. He pretends to understand the Scripture literally, and would make Mankind believe, that the Poverty and low Estate, which was recommended to the Church in its Infancy, and was only temporary Doctrine adapted to her

‘ her under Persecution, was to be preserved in
 ‘ her flourishing and established State. Sir, the
 ‘ Principles of *Toland*, *Woolston*, and all the
 ‘ Free-Thinkers, are not calculated to do half
 ‘ the Mischief, as those professed by this Fellow
 ‘ and his Followers.’

‘ Sir, answered *Adams*, if *Mr. Whitefield* had
 ‘ carried his Doctrine no farther than you men-
 ‘ tion, I should have remained, as I once was,
 ‘ his Well-wisher. I am myself as great an Ene-
 ‘ my to the Luxury and Splendor of the Clergy
 ‘ as he can be. I do not, more than he, by the
 ‘ flourishing Estate of the Church, understand
 ‘ the Palaces, Equipages, Dress, Furniture, rich
 ‘ Dainties, and vast Fortunes of her Ministers.
 ‘ Surely those things, which favour so strongly of
 ‘ this World, become not the Servants of one who
 ‘ professed his Kingdom was not of it: but when
 ‘ he began to call Nonsense and Enthusiasm to
 ‘ his Aid, and set up the detestable Doctrine of
 ‘ Faith against Good Works, I was his Friend no
 ‘ longer; for surely, that Doctrine was coined
 ‘ in Hell, and one would think none but the
 ‘ Devil himself could have the Confidence to
 ‘ preach it. For can any thing be more dero-
 ‘ gatory to the Honour of God, than for Men
 ‘ to imagine that the All-wise Being will here-
 ‘ after say to the Good and Virtuous, *Notwith-*
 ‘ *standing the Purity of thy Life, notwithstand-*
 ‘ *ing that constant Rule of Virtue and Goodness*
 ‘ *in which you walked upon Earth, still as thou*
 ‘ *didst not believe every thing in the true Ortho-*
 ‘ *dox manner, thy want of Faith shall condemn*
 ‘ *thee?* Or on the other side, can any Doctrine
 ‘ have a more pernicious Influence on Society,
 ‘ than a Persuasion, that it will be a good Plea
 ‘ for

‘ for the Villain at the last Day ; *Lord, it is true,*
‘ *I never obeyed one of thy Commandments, yet pu-*
‘ *nish me not, for I believe them all ?*’ ‘ I suppose,
‘ Sir, said the Bookseller, your Sermons are of
‘ a different Kind.’ Ay, Sir, said *Adams*, the
‘ contrary, I thank Heaven, is inculcated in al-
‘ most every Page, or I should belye my own
‘ Opinion, which hath always been, that a vir-
‘ tuous and good *Turk*, or Heathen, are more
‘ acceptable in the Sight of their Creator, than a
‘ vicious and wicked Christian, tho’ his Faith
‘ was as perfectly orthodox as *St. Paul’s* himself.’
— ‘ I wish you Success, says the Bookseller, but
‘ must beg to be excused, as my Hands are so
‘ very full at present ; and indeed I am afraid,
‘ you will find a Backwardness in the Trade, to
‘ engage in a Book which the Clergy would be
‘ certain to cry down.’ ‘ God forbid, says *A-*
‘ *dams*, any Books should be propagated which
‘ the Clergy would cry down : but if you mean
‘ by the Clergy, some few designing factious
‘ Men, who have it at heart to establish some
‘ favourite Schemes at the Price of the Liberty
‘ of Mankind, and the very Essence of Religion,
‘ it is not in the Power of such Persons to decry
‘ any Book they please ; witness that excellent
‘ Book called, *A plain Account of the Nature and*
‘ *End of the Sacrament* ; a Book written (if I
‘ may venture on the Expression) with the Pen
‘ of an Angel, and calculated to restore the true
‘ Use of Christianity, and of that sacred Institu-
‘ tion : for what could tend more to the noble
‘ Purposes of Religion, than frequent cheerful
‘ Meetings among the Members of a Society,
‘ in which they should, in the Presence of one
‘ another, and in the Service of the supreme Be-
‘ ing,

'ing, make Promises of being good, friendly
 'and benevolent to each other? Now this ex-
 'cellent Book was attacked by a Party, but un-
 'successfully.' At these Words *Barnabas* fell
 a ringing with all the Violence imaginable; upon
 which a Servant attending, he bid him 'bring a
 'Bill immediately: for that he was in Compa-
 'ny, for aught he knew, with the Devil him-
 'self; and he expected to hear the Alcoran, the
 'Leviathan, or *Woolston* commended, if he staid
 'a few Minutes longer.' *Adams* desired, 'as he
 'was so much moved at his mentioning a Book,
 'which he did without apprehending any possi-
 'bility of Offence, that he would be so kind
 'to propose any Objections he had to it, which
 'he would endeavour to answer.' 'I propose
 'Objections!' said *Barnabas*, 'I never read a
 'Syllable in any such wicked Book; I never
 'saw it in my Life, I assure you.'—*Adams* was
 going to answer, when a most hideous Uproar be-
 gan in the Inn. *Mrs. Tow-wouse*, *Mr. Tow-*
wouse and *Betty*, all lifting up their Voices toge-
 ther: but *Mrs. Tow-wouse's* Voice, like a Bass
 Viol in a Concert, was clearly and distinctly di-
 stinguished among the rest, and was heard to
 articulate the following Sounds,—'O you damn'd
 'Villain, is this the Return to all the Care I
 'have taken of your Family? This the Reward
 'of my Virtue? Is this the manner in which
 'you behave to one who brought you a Fortune,
 'and preferred you to so many Matches, all your
 'Betters? To abuse my Bed, my own Bed,
 'with my own Servant: but I'll maul the Slut,
 'I'll tear her nasty Eyes out; was ever such a
 'pitiful Dog, to take up with such a mean Trol-
 'lop? If she had been a Gentlewoman like my-
 'self,

‘self, it had been some excuse; but a beggarly
‘saucy dirty Servant-maid.—Get you out of my
‘House, you Whore.’ To which, she added
another Name, which we do not care to stain
our Paper with. It was a Monosyllable begin-
ning with a B—, and indeed was the same, as if
she had pronounced the Words, *She Dog*. Which
Term, we shall, to avoid Offence, use on this
Occasion, tho’ indeed both the Mistress and
Maid uttered the above-mentioned B—, a Word
extremely disgusting to Females of the lower sort.
Betty had borne all hitherto with Patience, and
had uttered only Lamentations: but the last Ap-
pellation stung her to the Quick, ‘I am a Wo-
‘man as well as yourself,’ she roared out, ‘and
‘no *She Dog*, and if I have been a little naugh-
‘ty, I am not the first; if I have been no bet-
‘ter than I should be,’ cries she sobbing, ‘that’s
‘no Reason you should call me out of my Name;
‘my Be-Betters are wo--worse than me.’ ‘Huz-
‘zy, huzzy,’ says Mrs. *Tow-wouse*, ‘have you
‘the Impudence to answer me? Did I not catch
‘you, you saucy—’ and then again repeated the
terrible Word so odious to female Ears. ‘I can’t
‘bear that Name,’ answered *Betty*, ‘if I have
‘been wicked, I am to answer for it myself in
‘the other World; but I have done nothing
‘that’s unnatural; and I will go out of your
‘House this Moment: for I will never be cal-
‘led *She Dog*, by any Mistress in *England*.’
Mrs. *Tow-wouse* then armed herself with the
Spit; but was prevented from executing any
dreadful Purpose by Mr. *Adams*, who confined
her Arms with the Strength of a Wrist which
Hercules would not have been ashamed of. Mr.
Tow-wouse being caught, as our Lawyers express
it,

it, with the Manner, and having no Defence to make, very prudently withdrew himself, and *Betty* committed herself to the Protection of the Hostler, who, tho' she could not conceive him pleased with what had happened, was in her Opinion rather a gentler Beast than her Mistress.

Mrs. *Tow-woose*, at the Intercession of Mr. *Adams*, and finding the Enemy vanished, began to compose herself, and at length recovered the usual Serenity of her Temper, in which we will leave her, to open to the Reader the Steps which led to a Catastrophe, common enough, and comical enough too, perhaps in modern History, yet often fatal to the Repose and Well-being of Families, and the Subject of many Tragedies, both in Life and on the Stage.

C H A P. XVIII.

The History of Betty the Chamber-maid, and an Account of what occasioned the violent Scene in the preceding Chapter.

B*etty*, who was the Occasion of all this Hurry, had some good Qualities. She had Good-nature, Generosity and Compassion, but unfortunately her Constitution was composed of those warm Ingredients, which, though the Purity of Courts or Nunneries might have happily controuled them, were by no means able to endure the ticklish Situation of a Chamber-maid at an Inn, who is daily liable to the Solicitations of Lovers of all Complexions, to the dangerous Addresses of fine Gentlemen of the Army, who sometimes are obliged to reside with them a whole
Year

Year together; and above all are exposed to the Caresses of Footmen, Stage-Coachmen, and Drawers; all of whom employ the whole Artillery of kissing, flattering, bribing, and every other Weapon which is to be found in the whole Armory of Love, against them.

Betty, who was but one and twenty, had now lived three Years in this dangerous Situation, during which she had escaped pretty well. An Ensign of Foot was the first Person who made an Impression on her Heart; he did indeed raise a Flame in her, which required the Care of a Surgeon to cool.

While she burnt for him, several others burnt for her. Officers of the Army, young Gentlemen travelling the western Circuit, inoffensive Squires, and some of graver Character were set afire by her Charms!

At length, having perfectly recovered the Effects of her first unhappy Passion, she seemed to have vowed a State of perpetual Chastity. She was long deaf to all the Sufferings of her Lovers, till one Day at a neighbouring Fair, the Rhetoric of *John* the Hostler, with a new Straw Hat, and a Pint of Wine, made a second Conquest over her.

She did not however feel any of those Flames on this Occasion, which had been the Consequence of her former Amour; nor indeed those other ill Effects, which prudent young Women very justly apprehend from too absolute an Indulgence to the pressing Endearments of their Lovers. This latter, perhaps, was a little owing to her not being entirely constant to *John*, with whom she permitted *Tom Whipwell* the Stage-Coach-

Ch. 18. JOSEPH ANDREWS, &c. 91

Coachman, and now and then a handsome young Traveller, to share her Favours.

Mr. *Tow-wouse* had for some time cast the languishing Eyes of Affection on this young Maiden. He had laid hold on every Opportunity of saying tender things to her, squeezing her by the Hand, and sometimes kissing her Lips: for as the Violence of his Passion had considerably abated to Mrs. *Tow-wouse*; so like Water, which is stopt from its usual Current in one Place, it naturally sought a Vent in another. Mrs. *Tow-wouse* is thought to have perceived this Abatement, and probably it added very little to the natural Sweetness of her Temper; for tho' she was as true to her Husband, as the Dial to the Sun, she was rather more desirous of being shone on, as being more capable of feeling his Warmth.

Ever since *Joseph's* Arrival, *Betty* had conceived an extraordinary Liking to him, which discovered itself more and more, as he grew better and better; 'till that fatal Evening when, as she was warming his Bed, her Passion grew to such a Height, and so perfectly mastered both her Modesty and her Reason, that after many fruitless Hints and sly Insinuations, she at last threw down the Warming-Pan, and embracing him with great Eagerness swore he was the handsomest Creature she had ever seen.

Joseph in great Confusion leapt from her, and told her, he was sorry to see a young Woman cast off all Regard to Modesty: but she had gone too far to recede, and grew so very indecent, that *Joseph* was obliged, contrary to his Inclination, to use some Violence to her, and taking her in his Arms, he shut her out of the Room, and locked the Door.

How

How ought Man to rejoice, that his Chastity is always in his own Power, that if he hath sufficient Strength of Mind, he hath always a competent Strength of Body to defend himself, and cannot, like a poor weak Woman, be ravished against his Will!

Betty was in the most violent Agitation at this Disappointment. Rage and Lust pulled her Heart, as with two Strings, two different Ways; one Moment she thought of stabbing *Joseph*, the next, of taking him in her Arms, and devouring him with Kisses; but the latter Passion was far more prevalent. Then she thought of revenging his Refusal on herself: but whilst she was engaged in this Meditation, happily Death presented himself to her in so many Shapes of drowning, hanging, poisoning, &c. that her distracted Mind could resolve on none. In this Perturbation of Spirit, it accidentally occurred to her Memory, that her Master's Bed was not made; she therefore went directly to his Room; where he happened at that time to be engaged at his Bureau. As soon as she saw him, she attempted to retire: but he called her back, and taking her by the Hand squeezed her so tenderly, at the same time whispered so many soft things into her Ears, and then pressed her so closely with his Kisses, that the vanquished Fair-One, whose Passions were already raised, and which were not so whimsically capricious that one Man only could lay them, though perhaps, she would have rather preferred that one: The vanquished Fair-One quietly submitted, I say, to her Master's Will, who had just attained the Accomplishment of his Bliss, when Mrs. *Tow-wouse* unexpectedly entered the Room, and caused all that Confusion which we have before seen, and which

it is not necessary at present to take any farther Notice of : Since without the Assistance of a single Hint from us, every Reader of any Speculation, or Experience, though not married himself, may easily conjecture, that it concluded with the Discharge of *Betty*, the Submission of Mr. *Tow-wouse*, with some things to be performed on his side by way of Gratitude for his Wife's Goodness in being reconciled to him, with many hearty Promises never to offend any more in the like manner : and lastly, his quietly and contentedly bearing to be reminded of his Transgressions, as a kind of Penance, once or twice a Day, during the Residue of his Life.

The End of the First Book.

T H E



THE
HISTORY
OF THE
ADVENTURES
OF

*Joseph Andrews, and his Friend
Mr. Abraham Adams.*

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

Of Divisions in Authors.

THERE are certain Mysteries or Secrets in all Trades from the highest to the lowest, from that of *Prime ministring* to this of *Authoring*, which are seldom discovered, unless to Members of the same Calling. Among those used by us Gentlemen of the latter Occupation, I take this of dividing our Works

Works into Books and Chapters to be none of the least considerable. Now for want of being truly acquainted with this Secret, common Readers imagine, that by this Art of dividing, we mean only to swell our Works to a much larger Bulk than they would otherwise be extended to. These several Places therefore in our Paper, which are filled with our Books and Chapters, are understood as so much Buckram, Stays, and Stay-tape in a Taylor's Bill, serving only to make up the Sum Total, commonly found at the Bottom of our first Page, and of his last.

But in reality the Case is otherwise, and in this, as well as all other Instances, we consult the Advantage of our Reader, not our own; and indeed many notable Uses arise to him from this Method: for first, those little Spaces between our Chapters may be looked upon as an Inn or Resting-Place, where he may stop and take a Glass, or any other Refreshment, as it pleases him. Nay, our fine Readers will, perhaps, be scarce able to travel farther than through one of them in a Day. As to those vacant Pages which are placed between our Books, they are to be regarded as those Stages, where, in long Journeys, the Traveller stays some time to repose himself, and consider of what he hath seen in the Parts he hath already past through; a Consideration which I take the Liberty to recommend a little to the Reader: for however swift his Capacity may be, I would not advise him to travel through these Pages too fast: for if he doth, he may probably miss the seeing some curious Productions of Nature which will be observed by the slower and more accurate Reader. A Volume without any such Places of Rest resembles the Opening of Wilds or Seas,
which

which tires the Eye and fatigues the Spirit when entered upon.

Secondly, what are the Contents prefixed to every Chapter, but so many Inscriptions over the Gates of Inns (to continue the same Metaphor) informing the Reader what Entertainment he is to expect, which if he likes not, he may travel on to the next: for in Biography, as we are not tied down to an exact Concatenation equally with other Historians; so a Chapter or two (for Instance this I am now writing) may be often passed over without any Injury to the Whole. And in these Inscriptions I have been as faithful as possible, not imitating the celebrated *Montaigne*, who promises you one thing and gives you another; nor some Title-Page Authors, who promise a great deal, and produce nothing at all.

There are, besides these more obvious Benefits, several others which our Readers enjoy from this Art of dividing; tho' perhaps most of them too mysterious to be presently understood by any who are not initiated into the Science of *Authoring*. To mention therefore but one which is most obvious, it prevents spoiling the Beauty of a Book by turning down its Leaves, a Method otherwise necessary to those Readers, who (tho' they read with great Improvement and Advantage) are apt, when they return to their Study, after half an Hour's Absence, to forget where they left off.

These Divisions have the Sanction of great Antiquity. *Homer* not only divided his great Work into twenty-four Books, (in Compliment perhaps to the twenty-four Letters to which he had very particular Obligations) but, according to the Opinion of some very sagacious Critics, hawked them all separately, delivering only one Book at a time,
(probably

(probably by Subscription.) He was the first Inventor of the Art which hath so long lain dormant, of publishing by Numbers ; an Art now brought to such Perfection, that even Dictionaries are divided and exhibited piece-meal to the Publick ; nay, one Bookseller hath (*to encourage Learning and ease the Public*) contrived to give them a Dictionary in this divided manner, for only fifteen Shillings more than it would have cost entire.

Virgil hath given us his Poem in twelve Books, an Argument of his Modesty ; for by that doubtless he would insinuate that he pretends to no more than half the Merit of the *Greek* : for the same Reason, our *Milton* went originally no farther than ten ; 'till being puffed up by the Praise of his Friends, he put himself on the same footing with the *Roman* Poet.

I shall not however enter so deep into this Matter as some very learned Criticks have done ; who have with infinite Labour and acute Discernment discovered what Books are proper for Embellishment, and what require Simplicity only, particularly with regard to Similies, which I think are now generally agreed to become any Book but the first.

I will dismiss this Chapter with the following Observation : That it becomes an Author generally to divide a Book, as it does a Butcher to joint his Meat, for such Assistance is of great Help to both the Reader and the Carver. And now having indulged myself a little, I will endeavour to indulge the Curiosity of my Reader, who is no doubt impatient to know what he will find in the subsequent Chapters of this Book.

C H A P. II.

A surprizing Instance of Mr. Adams's short Memory, with the unfortunate Consequences which is brought on Joseph.

MR. Adams and Joseph were now ready to depart different Ways, when an Accident determined the former to return with his Friend, which *Tow-wouse*, *Barnabas*, and the Bookseller had not been able to do. This Accident was, that those Sermons, which the Parson was travelling to *London* to publish, were, O my good Reader, left behind ; what he had mistaken for them in the Saddle-bags being no other than three Shirts, a Pair of Shoes, and some other Necessaries, which Mrs. Adams, who thought her Husband would want Shirts more than Sermons on his Journey, had carefully provided him.

This Discovery was now luckily owing to the Presence of Joseph at the opening the Saddle-Bags ; who having heard his Friend say, he carried with him nine Volumes of Sermons, and not being of that Sect of Philosophers, who can reduce all the Matter of the World into a Nut-shell, seeing there was no room for them in the Bags, where the Parson had said they were deposited, had the Curiosity to cry out, ‘ Bless me, Sir, where are your Sermons ? ’ The Parson answered, ‘ There, there, Child, there they are, under my Shirts.’ Now it happened that he had taken forth his last Shirt, and the Vehicle remained visibly empty. ‘ Sure, Sir,’ says Joseph, ‘ there is nothing in the Bags.’ Upon which
Adams

Adams starting, and testifying some Surprize cry'd, 'Hey! fie, fie upon it; they are not here sure enough. Ay, they are certainly left behind.'

Joseph was greatly concerned at the Uneasiness which he apprehended his Friend must feel from this Disappointment: He begged him to pursue his Journey, and promised he would himself return with the Books to him, with the utmost Expedition. 'No, thank you, Child,' answered *Adams*, 'it shall not be so. What would it avail me, to tarry in the Great City, unless I had my Discourses with me, which are, *ut ita dicam*, the sole Cause, the *Aitia monotata* of my Peregrination. No, Child, as this Accident hath happened, I am resolved to return back to my Cure, together with you; which indeed my Inclination sufficiently leads me to. This Disappointment may perhaps be intended for my Good. He concluded with a Verse out of *Theocritus*, which signifies no more than, *that sometimes it rains, and sometimes the Sun shines.*'

Joseph bowed with Obedience, and Thankfulness for the Inclination which the Parson express'd of returning with him; and now the Bill was called for, which, on Examination, amounted within a Shilling to the Sum Mr. *Adams* had in his Pocket. Perhaps the Reader may wonder how he was able to produce a sufficient Sum for so many Days: that he may not be surprized therefore, it cannot be unnecessary to acquaint him, that he had borrowed a Guinea of a Servant belonging to the Coach and Six, who had been formerly one of his Parishioners, and whose Master, the Owner of the Coach, then lived within three Miles of him: for so good was the

Credit of Mr. *Adams*, that even Mr. *Peter* the Lady *Booby's* Steward would have lent him a Guinea with very little Security.

Mr. *Adams* discharged the Bill, and they were both setting out, having agreed *to ride and tie* : a Method of travelling much used by Persons who have but one Horse between them, and is thus performed. The two Travellers set out together, one on horseback, the other on foot : Now as it generally happens that he on horseback outgoes him on foot, the Custom is, that when he arrives at the Distance agreed on, he is to dismount, tie the Horse to some Gate, Tree, Post, or other thing, and then proceed on foot ; when the other comes up to the Horse, he unties him, mounts and gallops on, 'till having passed by his Fellow-Traveller, he likewise arrives at the Place of tying. And this is that Method of Travelling so much in use among our prudent Ancestors, who knew that Horses had Mouths as well as Legs, and that they could not use the latter without being at the Expence of suffering the Beasts themselves to use the former. This was the Method in use in those Days : when, instead of a Coach and Six, a Member of Parliament's Lady used to mount a Pillion behind her Husband ; and a grave Serjeant at Law condescended to amble to *Westminster* on an easy Pad, with his Clerk kicking his Heels behind him.

Adams was now gone some Minutes, having insisted on *Joseph's* beginning the Journey on horseback, and *Joseph* had his Foot in the Stirrup, when the Hostler presented him a Bill for the Horse's Board during his Residence at the Inn. *Joseph* said Mr. *Adams* had paid all ; but this Matter being referred to Mr. *Tow-wouse*, was by him decided

decided in favour of the Hostler, and indeed with Truth and Justice : for this was a fresh Instance of that Shortness of Memory which did not arise from want of Parts, but that continual Hurry in which Parson *Adams* was always involved.

Joseph was now reduced to a Dilemma which extremely puzzled him. The Sum due for Horsemeat was twelve Shillings, (for *Adams*, who had borrowed the Beast of his Clerk, had ordered him to be fed as well as they could feed him) and the Cash in his Pocket amounted to Sixpence, (for *Adams* had divided the last Shilling with him.) Now, tho' there have been some ingenious Persons who have contrived to pay twelve Shillings with Sixpence, *Joseph* was not one of them. He had never contracted a Debt in his Life, and was consequently the less ready at an Expedient to extricate himself. *Tow-wouse* was willing to give him Credit 'till next time, to which Mrs. *Tow-wouse* would probably have consented (for such was *Joseph's* Beauty, that it had made some Impression even on that Piece of Flint which that good Woman wore in her Bosom by way of Heart.) *Joseph* would have found therefore, very likely, the Passage free, had he not, when he honestly discovered the Nakedness of his Pockets, pulled out that little Piece of Gold which we have mentioned before. This caused Mrs. *Tow-wouse's* Eyes to water ; she told *Joseph*, she did not conceive a Man could want Money whilst he had Gold in his Pocket. *Joseph* answered, he had such a Value for that little Piece of Gold, that he would not part with it for a hundred times the Riches which the greatest Esquire in the County was worth. ' A pretty Way indeed,' said Mrs. *Tow-wouse*, ' to run in debt, and then refuse to part with your
F 3 Money,

' Money, because you have a Value for it. I
 ' never knew any Piece of Gold of more Value
 ' than as many Shillings as it would change for.'
 ' Not to preserve my Life from starving, nor to
 ' redeem it from a Robber, would I part with this
 ' dear Piece,' answered *Joseph*. ' What (says
 ' Mrs. *Tow-wouse*) I suppose it was given you by
 ' some vile Trollop, some Miss or other ; if it had
 ' been the Present of a virtuous Woman, you
 ' would not have had such a Value for it. My
 ' Husband is a Fool if he parts with the Horse
 ' without being paid for him.' ' No, no, I can't
 ' part with the Horse indeed till I have the Mo-
 ' ney,' cry'd *Tow-wouse*. A Resolution highly
 commended by a Lawyer then in the Yard, who
 declared Mr. *Tow-wouse* might justify the De-
 tainer.

As we cannot therefore at present get Mr. *Joseph*
 out of the Inn, we shall leave him in it, and
 carry our Reader on after Parson *Adams*, who, his
 Mind being perfectly at Ease, fell into a Contem-
 plation on a Passage in *Æschylus*, which enter-
 tained him for three Miles together, without suf-
 fering him once to reflect on his Fellow-Traveller.

At length, having spun out his Thread, and
 being now at the Summit of a Hill, he cast his
 Eyes backwards, and wondered that he could not
 see any Sign of *Joseph*. As he left him ready to
 mount the Horse, he could not apprehend any
 Mischief had happened, neither could he suspect
 that he miss'd his Way, it being so broad and
 plain : the only Reason which presented itself to
 him, was, that he had met with an Acquaintance
 who had prevailed with him to delay some time in
 Discourse.

He

He therefore resolved to proceed slowly forwards, not doubting but that he should be shortly overtaken, and soon came to a large Water, which filling the whole Road, he saw no Method of passing unless by wading through, which he accordingly did up to his Middle; but was no sooner got to the other Side than he perceived, if he had looked over the Hedge, he would have found a Foot-Path capable of conducting him without wetting his Shoes.

His Surprise at *Joseph's* not coming up grew now very troublesome: he began to fear he knew not what; and as he determined to move no farther, and, if he did not shortly overtake him, to return back, he wished to find a House of public Entertainment where he might dry his Clothes and refresh himself with a Pint: but seeing no such, (for no other Reason than because he did not cast his Eyes a hundred Yards forwards) he sat himself down on a Stile, and pulled out his *Æschylus*.

A Fellow passing presently by, *Adams* asked him, if he could direct him to an Alehouse. The Fellow, who had just left it, and perceived the House and Sign to be within sight, thinking he had jeered him, and being of a morose Temper, bade him *follow his Nose and be d—n'd*. *Adams* told him he was a *saucy Jackanapes*; upon which the Fellow turned about angrily: but perceiving *Adams* clench his Fist, he thought proper to go on without taking any farther notice.

A Horseman following immediately after, and being asked the same Question, answered, Friend, there is one within a Stone's-Throw; I believe you may see it before you. *Adams*, lifting up his Eyes, cry'd, I protest and so there is; and, thanking his Informer, proceeded directly to it.

C H A P III.

The Opinion of two Lawyers concerning the same Gentleman, with Mr. Adams's Enquiry into the Religion of his Host.

H E had just entered the House, had called for his Pint and seated himself, when two Horsemen came to the Door, and fastening their Horses to the Rails, alighted. They said there was a violent Shower of Rain coming on, which they intended to weather there, and went into a little Room by themselves, not perceiving Mr. Adams.

One of these immediately asked the other, if he had seen a more comical Adventure a great while? Upon which the other said, 'he doubted whether by Law, the Landlord could justify detaining the Horse for his Corn and Hay.' But the former answered, 'undoubtedly he can; it is an adjudged Case, and I have known it tried.'

Adams, who tho' he was, as the Reader may suspect, a little inclined to Forgetfulness, never wanted more than a Hint to remind him, overhearing their Discourse, immediately suggested to himself that this was his own Horse, and that he had forgot to pay for him, which, upon Enquiry, he was certified of by the Gentlemen; who added, that the Horse was likely to have more Rest than Food, unless he was paid for.

The poor Parson resolved to return presently to the Inn, tho' he knew no more than *Joseph*,
how

how to procure his Horse his Liberty: he was however prevailed on to stay under Covert, 'till the Shower, which was now very violent, was over.

The three Travellers then sat down together over a Mug of good Beer; when *Adams*, who had observed a Gentleman's House as he passed along the Road, enquired to whom it belonged: one of the Horsemen had no sooner mentioned the Owner's Name, than the other began to revile him in the most opprobrious Terms. The *English* Language scarce affords a single reproachful Word, which he did not vent on this Occasion. He charged him likewise with many particular Facts. He said,—‘ he no more regarded
‘ a Field of Wheat when he was hunting, than
‘ he did the High-way; that he had injured several poor Farmers by trampling their Corn
‘ under his Horse's Heels; and if any of them
‘ begged him with the utmost Submission to refrain, his Horse-whip was always ready to do
‘ them Justice.’ He said, ‘ that he was the
‘ greatest Tyrant to the Neighbours in every other Instance, and would not suffer a Farmer
‘ to keep a Gun, tho' he might justify it by
‘ Law; and in his own Family so cruel a Master, that he never kept a Servant a Twelve-
‘ month. In his Capacity as a Justice,’ continued he, ‘ he behaves so partially, that he commits or acquits just as he is in the Humour,
‘ without any regard to Truth or Evidence: The
‘ Devil may carry any one before him for me;
‘ I would rather be tried before some Judges
‘ than be a Prosecutor before him: If I had an
‘ Estate in the Neighbourhood, I would sell it for
‘ half the Value, rather than live near him.’

Adams shook his Head and said, ' he was sorry
' such Men were suffered to proceed with Impu-
' nity, and that Riches could set any Man above
' Law.' The Reviler a little after retiring in-
to the Yard, the Gentleman who had first men-
tioned his Name to *Adams*, began to assure him,
' that his Companion was a prejudiced Person.
' It is true, says he, perhaps, that he may have
' sometimes pursued his Game over a Field of
' Corn, but he hath always made the Party
' ample Satisfaction; that so far from tyranizing
' over his Neighbours, or taking away their
' Guns, he himself knew several Farmers not
' qualified, who not only kept Guns, but killed
' Game with them. That he was the best of
' Masters to his Servants, and several of them
' had grown old in his Service. That he was
' the best Justice of Peace in the Kingdom, and
' to his certain Knowledge had decided many dif-
' ficult Points, which were referred to him, with
' the greatest Equity, and the highest Wisdom.
' And he verily believed, several Persons would
' give a Year's Purchase more for an Estate near
' him, than under the Wings of any other great
' Man.' He had just finished his Encomium,
when his Companion returned and acquainted
him the Storm was over. Upon which, they
presently mounted their Horses and departed.

Adams, who was in the utmost Anxiety at
those different Characters of the same Person,
asked his Host if he knew the Gentleman: for
he began to imagine they had by Mistake been
speaking of two several Gentlemen. ' No, no,
' Master!' answered the Host, a shrewd cun-
ning Fellow, ' I know the Gentleman very
' well of whom they have been speaking, as I do
the

' the Gentlemen who spoke of him. As for
 ' riding over other Men's Corn, to my Know-
 ' ledge he hath not been on Horseback these
 ' two Years. I never heard he did any Injury
 ' of that kind; and as to making Reparation, he
 ' is not so free of his Money as that comes to
 ' neither. Nor did I ever hear of his taking
 ' away any Man's Gun; nay, I know several
 ' who have Guns in their Houses: but as for kil-
 ' ling Game with them, no Man is stricter; and
 ' I believed he would ruin any who did. You
 ' heard one of the Gentlemen say, he was the
 ' worst Master in the World, and the other that
 ' he is the best: but for my own part, I know
 ' all his Servants, and never heard from any of
 ' them that he was either one or the other.—'
 ' Aye! aye! says *Adams*, and how doth he behave
 ' as a Justice, pray?' 'Faith, Friend,' an-
 ' swered the Host, 'I question whether he is in
 ' the Commission: the only Cause I have heard
 ' he hath decided a great while, was one between
 ' those very two Persons who just went out
 ' of this House; and I am sure he determined
 ' that justly, for I heard the whole Matter.'
 ' Which did he decide it in favour of,' quoth
 ' *Adams*? 'I think I need not answer that Que-
 ' stion,' cried the Host, 'after the different
 ' Characters you have heard of him. It is not
 ' my Business to contradict Gentlemen, while
 ' they are drinking in my House; but I knew
 ' neither of them spoke a Syllable of 'Truth.'
 ' God forbid! (said *Adams*) that Men should
 ' arrive at such a Pitch of Wickedness, to belye
 ' the Character of their Neighbour from a little
 ' private Affection, or, what is infinitely worse,
 ' a private Spite. I rather believe we have mi-

‘staken them, and they mean two other Persons :
‘for there are many Houses on the Road.’
‘Why prithee, Friend, cries the Host, dost thou
‘pretend never to have told a Lye in thy Life?’
‘Never a malicious one, I am certain,’ answered *Adams* ; ‘nor with a Design to injure the
‘Reputation of any Man living.’ ‘Pugh, malicious ! no, no,’ replied the Host ; ‘not malicious with a Design to hang a Man, or bring
‘him into Trouble : but surely out of love to
‘one’s self, one must speak better of a Friend
‘than an Enemy.’ ‘Out of love to yourself,
‘you should confine yourself to Truth,’ says *Adams*, ‘for by doing otherwise, you injure the
‘noblest Part of yourself, your immortal Soul.
‘I can hardly believe any Man such an Idiot to
‘risque the Loss of that by any trifling Gain,
‘and the greatest Gain in this World is but Dirt
‘in comparison of what shall be revealed here-
‘after.’ Upon which the Host taking up the
Cup, with a Smile drank a Health to Hereafter :
‘adding, he was for something present.’ ‘Why,’
says *Adams* very gravely, ‘Do not you believe
‘another World?’ To which the Host answered,
‘yes, he was no Atheist.’ ‘And you believe
‘you have an immortal Soul,’ cries *Adams*. He
answered, ‘God forbid he should not.’ ‘And
‘Heaven and Hell?’ said the Parson. The Host
then bid him ‘not to profane : for those were
‘things not to be mentioned nor thought of
‘but in Church.’ *Adams* asked him, ‘why he
‘went to Church, if what he learned there had
‘no Influence on his Conduct in Life?’ ‘I go
‘to Church,’ answered the Host, ‘to say my
‘Prayers and behave godly.’ ‘And dost not thou,’
cry’d *Adams*, ‘believe what thou hearest at
‘Church?’

‘ Church ? ’ ‘ Most part of it, Master,’ returned the Host. ‘ And dost not thou then tremble,’ cries *Adams*, ‘ at the Thought of eternal Punishment ? ’ ‘ As for that, Master,’ said he, ‘ I never once thought about it : but what signifies talking about Matters so far off ? The Mug is out, shall I draw another ? ’

Whilst he was gone for that purpose, a Stage-Coach drove up to the Door. The Coachman coming into the House, was asked by the Mistress, what Passengers he had in his Coach ? A Parcel of *Squinny-gut* B—s, (says he) I have a good mind to overturn them ; you won’t prevail upon them to drink any thing I assure you. *Adams* asked him, if he had not seen a young Man on horseback on the Road, (describing *Joseph*.) Aye, said the Coachman, a Gentlewoman in my Coach that is his Acquaintance redeemed him and his Horse ; he would have been here before this Time, had not the Storm driven him to shelter. God bless her, said *Adams* in a Rapture ; nor could he delay walking out to satisfy himself who this charitable Woman was ; but what was his Surprise, when he saw his old Acquaintance, Madam *Slipslop* ? Her’s indeed was not so great, because she had been informed by *Joseph*, that he was on the Road. Very civil were the Salutations on both sides ; and Mrs. *Slipslop* rebuked the Hostess for denying the Gentleman to be there when she asked for him : but indeed the poor Woman had not erred designedly : for Mrs. *Slipslop* asked for a Clergyman ; and she had unhappily mistaken *Adams* for a Person travelling to a neighbouring Fair with the Thimble and Button, or some other such Operation : for he marched in a swinging great, but short,

short, white Coat with black Buttons, a short Wig, and a Hat, which so far from having a black Hatband, had nothing black about it.

Joseph was now come up, and *Mrs. Slipslop* would have had him quit his Horse to the Parson, and come himself into the Coach: but he absolutely refused, saying he thanked Heaven he was well enough recovered to be very able to ride, and added, he hoped he knew his Duty better than to ride in a Coach, while *Mr. Adams* was on horseback.

Mrs. Slipslop would have persisted longer, had not a Lady in the Coach put a short End to the Dispute, by refusing to suffer a Fellow in a Livery to ride in the same Coach with herself: so it was at length agreed that *Adams* should fill the vacant Place in the Coach, and *Joseph* should proceed on horseback.

They had not proceeded far before *Mrs. Slipslop*, addressing herself to the Parson, spoke thus: ‘ There hath been a strange Alteration in our Family, *Mr. Adams*, since Sir *Thomas*’s Death.’ ‘ A strange Alteration indeed!’ says *Adams*, ‘ as I gather from some Hints which have dropped from *Joseph*.’ ‘ Aye,’ says she, ‘ I could never have believed it, but the longer one lives in the World, the more one sees. So *Joseph* hath given you Hints.’ — ‘ But of what Nature,’ will always remain a perfect Secret with me,’ cries the Parson; ‘ he forced me to promise before he would communicate any thing. I am indeed concerned to find her Ladyship behave in so unbecoming a manner. I always thought her in the main, a good Lady, and should never have suspected her of Thoughts so unworthy a Christian, and with a young
‘ Lad

‘Lad her own Servant.’ ‘These things are no
‘Secrets to me, I assure you,’ cries *Slipslop*;
‘and I believe they will be none any where
‘shortly: for ever since the Boy’s Departure
‘she hath behaved more like a mad Woman
‘than any thing else.’ Truly, I am heartily
‘concerned,’ says *Adams*, ‘for she was a good
‘sort of a Lady; indeed I have often wished she
‘had attended a little more constantly at the
‘Service, but she hath done a great deal of
‘Good in the Parish.’ ‘O Mr. *Adams*!’ says
Slipslop, ‘People that don’t see all, often know
‘nothing. Many things have been given away
‘in our Family, I do assure you, without her
‘Knowledge. I have heard you say in the Pul-
‘pit, we ought not to brag: but indeed I can’t
‘avoid saying, if she had kept the Keys herself,
‘the Poor would have wanted many a Cordial
‘which I have let them have. As for my late
‘Master, he was as worthy a Man as ever lived,
‘and would have done infinite Good if he had
‘not been controlled: but he loved a quiet Life,
‘Heavens rest his Soul! I am confident he is
‘there, and enjoys a quiet Life, which some
‘Folks would not allow him here.’ *Adams* an-
swered, ‘he had never heard this before, and
‘was mistaken, if she herself,’ (for he remem-
bered she used to commend her Mistress and
blame her Master) ‘had not formerly been of
‘another Opinion.’ ‘I don’t know,’ replied
she ‘what I might once think: but now I am
‘confident Matters are as I tell you: The World
‘will shortly see who hath been deceived; for
‘my part I say nothing, but that it is wonder-
‘some how some People can carry all things with
‘a grave Face.’

Thus Mr. *Adams* and she discoursed: 'till they came opposite to a great House which stood at some Distance from the Road; a Lady in the Coach spying it, cry'd, Yonder lives the unfortunate *Leonora*, if one can justly call a Woman unfortunate whom we must own at the same time guilty, and the Author of her own Calamity. This was abundantly sufficient to awaken the Curiosity of Mr. *Adams*, as indeed it did that of the whole Company, who jointly solicited the Lady to acquaint them with *Leonora's* History, since it seemed, by what she had said, to contain something remarkable.

The Lady, who was perfectly well bred, did not require many Entreaties, and having only wished their Entertainment might make amends for the Company's Attention, she began in the following manner.

CHAP. IV.

The History of Leonora, or the Unfortunate Filt.

L*eonora* was the Daughter of a Gentleman of Fortune; she was tall and well-shaped, with a Sprightliness in her Countenance, which often attracts beyond more regular Features joined with an insipid Air; nor is this kind of Beauty less apt to deceive than allure; the Good Humour which it indicates, being often mistaken for Good-Nature, and the Vivacity for true Understanding.

Leonora,

Leonora, who was now at the Age of eighteen, lived with an Aunt of her's in a Town in the North of *England*. She was an extreme Lover of Gaiety, and very rarely missed a Ball, or any other public Assembly; where she had frequent Opportunities of satisfying a greedy Appetite of Vanity with the Preference which was given her by the Men to almost every other Woman present.

Among many young Fellows who were particular in their Gallantries towards her, *Horatio* soon distinguished himself in her Eyes beyond all his Competitors; she danced with more than ordinary Gaiety when he happened to be her Partner; neither the Fairness of the Evening, nor the Musick of the Nightingale, could lengthen her Walk like his Company. She affected no longer to understand the Civilities of others: whilst she inclined so attentive an Ear to every Compliment of *Horatio*, that she often smiled even when it was too delicate for her Comprehension.

‘Pray, Madam,’ says *Adams*, ‘who was this Squire *Horatio*?’

Horatio, says the Lady, was a young Gentleman of a good Family, bred to the Law, and had been some few Years called to the Degree of a Barrister. His Face and Person were such as the Generality allowed handsome: but he had a Dignity in his Air very rarely to be seen. His Temper was of the saturnine Complexion, but without the least Taint of Moroseness. He had Wit and Humour, with an Inclination to Satire, which he indulged rather too much.

This Gentleman, who had contracted the most violent Passion for *Leonora*, was the last Person who

who perceived the Probability of its Success. The whole Town had made the Match for him, before he himself had drawn a Confidence from her Actions sufficient to mention his Passion to her; for it was his Opinion, (and perhaps he was there in the right) that it is highly impolitick to talk seriously of Love to a Woman before you have made such a Progress in her Affections, that she herself expects and desires to hear it.

But whatever Diffidence the Fears of a Lover may create, which are apt to magnify every Favour conferred on a Rival, and to see the little Advances towards themselves through the other End of the Perspective; it was impossible that *Horatio's* Passion should so blind his Discernment, as to prevent his conceiving Hopes from the Behaviour of *Leonora*; whose Fondness for him was now as visible to an indifferent Person in their Company, as his for her.

‘I never knew any of these forward Sluts come to good,’ (says the Lady, who refused *Joseph's* Entrance into the Coach) ‘nor shall I wonder at any thing she doth in the Sequel.’

The Lady proceeded in her Story thus: It was in the Midst of a gay Conversation in the Walks one Evening, when *Horatio* whispered *Leonora*, that he was desirous to take a Turn or two with her in private; for that he had something to communicate to her of great Consequence. ‘Are you sure it is of Consequence?’ said she smiling,—‘I hope, answered he, you will think so too, since the whole future Happiness of my Life must depend on the Event.’

Leonora, who very much suspected what was coming, would have deferred it till another Time: but *Horatio*, who had more than half
con-

conquered the Difficulty of speaking, by the first Motion, was so very importunate, that she at last yielded, and leaving the rest of the Company, they turned aside into an unfrequented Walk.

They had retired far out of the Sight of the Company, both maintaining a strict Silence. At last *Horatio* made a full Stop, and taking *Leonora*, who stood pale and trembling, gently by the Hand, he fetched a deep Sigh, and then looking on her Eyes with all the Tenderneſs imaginable, he cried out in a faltering Accent ; ‘ *O Leonora !* is it neceſſary for me to declare to you on what the future Happineſs of my Life must be founded ! Must I say, there is something belonging to you which is a Bar to my Happineſs, and which unleſs you will part with, I must be miſerable ? ’ ‘ What can that be,’ replied *Leonora* ? — ‘ No wonder,’ said he, ‘ you are surprized that I should make an Objection to any thing which is yours, yet ſure you may gueſs, ſince it is the only one which the Riches of the World, if they were mine, should purſue of me. — O it is that which you must part with, to beſtow all the reſt ! Can *Leonora*, or rather will ſhe, doubt longer ? — Let me then whiſper it in her Ears, — It is your Name, Madam. It is by parting with that, by your Condeſcenſion to be for ever mine, which must at once prevent me from being the moſt miſerable, and will render me the happieſt of Mankind.’ *Leonora*, covered with Bluſhes, and with as angry a Look as ſhe could poſſibly put on, told him, ‘ that had ſhe ſuſpected what his Declaration would have been, he ſhould not have decoyed her from her Company ; that he had ſo ſurprized and frightened her, that ſhe begged him
‘ to

‘ to convey her back as quick as possible ; ’ which he, trembling very near as much as herself, did.

‘ More Fool he, cried *Slipslop*, it is a Sign he ‘ knew very little of our *Seet*. ’ ‘ Truly, Madam,’ said *Adams*, ‘ I think you are in the right, ‘ I should have insisted to know a piece of her ‘ Mind, when I had carried matters so far.’ But Mrs. *Grave-airs* desired the Lady to omit all such fulsome Stuff in her Story ; for that it made her sick.

Well then, Madam, to be as concise as possible, said the Lady, many Weeks had not pass’d after this Interview, before *Horatio* and *Leonora* were what they call on a good footing together. All Ceremonies except the last were now over ; the Writings were now drawn, and every thing was in the utmost forwardness preparative to the putting *Horatio* in possession of all his Wishes. I will, if you please, repeat you a Letter from each of them which I have got by heart, and which will give you no small Idea of their Passion on both sides.

Mrs. *Grave-airs* objected to hearing these Letters : but being put to the Vote, it was carried against her by all the rest in the Coach ; Parson *Adams* contending for it with the utmost Vehemence.

HORATIO to LEONORA.

HOW vain, most adorable Creature, is the Pursuit of Pleasure in the Absence of an Object to which the Mind is entirely devoted, unless it have some Relation to that Object ! I was last Night condemned to the Society of Men of Wit and Learning, which, however agreeable it might have formerly

formerly been to me, now only gave me a Suspicion that they imputed my Absence in Conversation to the true Cause. For which Reason, when your Engagements forbid me the extatic Happiness of seeing you, I am always desirous to be alone; since my Sentiments for Leonora are so delicate, that I cannot bear the Apprehension of another's prying into those delightful Endearments with which the warm Imagination of a Lover will sometimes indulge him, and which I suspect my Eyes then betray. To fear this Discovery of our Thoughts, may perhaps appear too ridiculous a Nicety to Minds not susceptible of all the Tendernesses of this delicate Passion. And surely we shall suspect there are few such, when we consider that it requires every human Virtue, to exert itself in its full Extent. Since the Beloved, whose Happiness it ultimately respects, may give us charming Opportunities of being brave in her Defence, generous to her Wants, compassionate to her Afflictions, grateful to her Kindness; and, in the same manner, of exercising every other Virtue, which he who would not do to any Degree, and that with the utmost Rapture, can never deserve the Name of a Lover: It is therefore with a View to the delicate Modesty of your Mind that I cultivate it so purely in my own; and it is that which will sufficiently suggest to you the Uneasiness I bear from those Liberties, which Men to whom the World allow Politeness, will sometimes give themselves on these Occasions.

Can I tell you with what Eagerness I expect the Arrival of that blest Day, when I shall experience the Falseness of a common Assertion, that the greatest human Happiness consists in Hope? A Doctrine which no Person had ever stronger Reason to believe than myself at present, since none ever tasted
such

such Bliss as fires my Bosom with the Thoughts of spending my future Days with such a Companion, and that every Action of my Life will have the glorious Satisfaction of conducing to your Happiness.

* LEONORA to HORATIO.

THE Refinement of your Mind has been so evidently proved by every Word and Action ever since I had first the Pleasure of knowing you, that I thought it impossible my good Opinion of Horatio could have been heightened to any additional Proof of Merit. This very Thought was my Amusement when I received your last Letter, which, when I opened, I confess I was surprized to find the delicate Sentiments expressed there, so far exceeded what I thought could come even from you, (altho' I know all the generous Principles human Nature is capable of, are centered in your Breast) that Words cannot paint what I feel on the Reflection, that my Happiness shall be the ultimate End of all your Actions.

Oh Horatio ! what a Life must that be, where the meanest domestic Cares are sweetened by the pleasing Consideration, that the Man on Earth who best deserves, and to whom you are most inclined to give your Affections, is to reap either Profit or Pleasure from all you do ! In such a Case, Toils must be turned into Diversions, and nothing but the unavoidable Inconveniencies of Life can make us remember that we are mortal.

* This Letter was written by a young Lady on reading the former.

If

If the solitary Turn of your Thoughts, and the Desire of keeping them undiscovered, makes even the Conversation of Men of Wit and Learning tedious to you, what anxious Hours must I spend who am condemned by Custom to the Conversation of Women, whose natural Curiosity leads them to pry into all my Thoughts, and whose Envy can never suffer Horatio's Heart to be possessed by any one without forcing them into malicious Designs against the Person who is so happy as to possess it : but indeed, if ever Envy can possibly have any Excuse, or even Alleviation, it is in this Case, where the Good is so great, and it must be equally natural to all to wish it for themselves, nor am I ashamed to own it : and to your Merit, Horatio, I am obliged, that prevents my being in that most uneasy of all the Situations I can figure in my Imagination, of being led by Inclination to love the Person whom my own Judgment forces me to condemn.

Matters were in so great forwardness between this fond Couple, that the Day was fixed for their Marriage, and was now within a Fortnight, when the Sessions chanced to be held for that County in a Town about twenty Miles Distance from that which is the Scene of our Story. It seems it is usual for the young Gentlemen of the Bar to repair to these Sessions, not so much for the sake of Profit, as to shew their Parts, and learn the Law of the Justices of Peace : for which Purpose one of the wisest and gravest of all the Justices is appointed Speaker or Chairman, as they modestly call it, and he reads them a Lecture, and instructs them in the true Knowledge of the Law.

‘ You are here guilty of a little Mistake, says
 ‘ Adams, which if you please I will correct ; I
 ‘ have

‘ have attended at one of these Quarter-Sessions, where I observed the Counsel taught the Justices, instead of learning any thing of them.’

It is not very material, said the Lady. Hither repaired *Horatio*, who as he hoped by his Profession to advance his Fortune, which was not at present very large, for the sake of his dear *Leonora*, he resolved to spare no Pains, nor lose any Opportunity of improving or advancing himself in it.

The same Afternoon in which he left the Town, as *Leonora* stood at her Window, a Coach and Six passed by : which she declared to be the completest, genteelest, prettiest Equipage she ever saw ; adding these remarkable Words, *O I am in love with that Equipage !* which, tho’ her Friend *Florella* at that time did not greatly regard, she hath since remembered.

In the Evening an Assembly was held, which *Leonora* honoured with her Company : but intended to pay her dear *Horatio* the Compliment of refusing to dance in his Absence.

O why have not Women as good Resolution to maintain their Vows, as they have often good Inclinations in making them !

The Gentleman who owned the Coach and Six came to the Assembly. His Clothes were as remarkably fine as his Equipage could be. He soon attracted the Eyes of the Company ; all the Smarts, all the Silk Waistcoats with Silver and Gold Edgings, were eclipsed in an instant.

Madam, said *Adams*, if it be not impertinent, I should be glad to know how this Gentleman was dressed.

Sir, answered the Lady, I have been told he had on a Cut-Velvet Coat of a Cinnamon Colour,

lined with a Pink Satten, embroidered all over with Gold; his Waistcoat, which was Cloth of Silver, was embroidered with Gold likewise. I cannot be particular as to the rest of his Dress: but it was all in the *French* Fashion; for *Bellarmino* (that was his Name), was just arrived from *Paris*.

This fine Figure did not more entirely engage the Eyes of every Lady in the Assembly, than *Leonora* did his. He had scarce beheld her, but he stood motionless and fixed as a Statue, or at least would have done so, if Good-Breeding had permitted him. However, he carried it so far, before he had Power to correct himself, that every Person in the Room easily discovered where his Admiration was settled. The other Ladies began to single out their former Partners, all perceiving who would be *Bellarmino's* Choice; which they however endeavoured, by all possible means, to prevent: Many of them saying to *Leonora*, 'O Madam, I suppose we shan't have the Pleasure of seeing you dance To-Night;' and then crying out in *Bellarmino's* Hearing, 'O *Leonora* will not dance, I assure you; her Partner is not here.' One maliciously attempted to prevent her, by sending a disagreeable Fellow to ask her, that so she might be obliged either to dance with him, or sit down: but this Scheme proved abortive.

Leonora saw herself admired by the fine Stranger, and envied by every Woman present. Her little Heart began to flutter within her, and her Head was agitated with a convulsive Motion; she seemed as if she would speak to several of her Acquaintance, but had nothing to say: for as she would not mention her present Triumph; so

she could not disengage her Thoughts one Moment from the Contemplation of it : She had never tasted any thing like this Happiness. She had before known what it was to torment a single Woman ; but to be hated and secretly cursed by a whole Assembly, was a Joy reserved for this blessed Moment. As this vast Profusion of Ecstasy had confounded her Understanding ; so there was nothing so foolish as her Behaviour ; she played a thousand childish Tricks, distorted her Person into several Shapes, and her Face into several Laughs, without any Reason. In a Word, her Carriage was as absurd as her Desires, which were, to affect an Insensibility of the Stranger's Admiration, and at the same time a Triumph, from that Admiration, over every Woman in the Room.

In this Temper of Mind, *Bellarmino*, having enquired who she was, advanced to her, and with a low Bow, begged the Honour of dancing with her, which she with as low a Curt'sy immediately granted. She danced with him all Night, and enjoyed perhaps the highest Pleasure, that she was capable of feeling.

At these Words, *Adams* fetched a deep Groan, which frightened the Ladies, who told him, ' they hoped he was not ill.' He answered, ' he groaned only for the Folly of *Leonora*.'

Leonora retired (continued the Lady) about six in the Morning, but not to Rest. She tumbled and tossed in her Bed, with very short Intervals of Sleep, and those entirely filled with Dreams of the Equipage, and fine Clothes she had seen, and the Balls, Operas and Ridottos, which had been the Subject of their Conversation.

In the Afternoon *Bellarmino*, in the dear Coach and Six, came to wait on her. He was indeed charmed with her Person, and was, on Enquiry, so well pleased with the Circumstances of her Father, (for he himself, notwithstanding all his Finery, was not quite so rich as a *Cræsus* or an *Attalus*.) ‘*Attalus*, says Mr. *Adams*: but pray ‘how came you acquainted with these Names?’ The Lady smiled at the Question, and proceeded—He was so pleased, I say, that he resolved to make his Addresses to her directly. He did so accordingly, and that with so much Warmth and Briskness, that he quickly baffled her weak Repulses, and obliged the Lady to refer him to her Father, who, she knew, would quickly declare in favour of a Coach and Six.

Thus, what *Horatio* had by Sighs and Tears, Love and Tenderneſs, been so long obtaining, the *French-English Bellarmino* with Gaiety and Gallantry possessed himself of in an instant. In other Words, what Modesty had employed a full Year in raising, Impudence demolished in twenty-four Hours.

Here *Adams* groaned a second time; but the Ladies, who began to smoke him, took no Notice.

From the Opening of the Assembly till the End of *Bellarmino*’s Visit, *Leonora* had scarce once thought of *Horatio*: but he now began, tho’ an unwelcome Guest, to enter into her Mind. She wished she had seen the charming *Bellarmino* and his charming Equipage, before Matters had gone so far. ‘Yet why (says she) should I wish to have seen him before; or what signifies it that I have seen him now? Is not ‘*Horatio* my Lover? almost my Husband? Is

‘ he not as handsome, nay handsomer, than *Bellarmino*? Aye, but *Bellarmino* is the genteeler and the finer Man; yes, that he must be allowed. Yes, yes, he is that certainly. But did not I no longer ago than Yesterday love *Horatio* more than all the World? aye, but Yesterday I had not seen *Bellarmino*. But doth not *Horatio* doat on me, and may he not in despair break his Heart if I abandon him? Well, and hath not *Bellarmino* a Heart to break too? Yes, but I promised *Horatio* first; but that was poor *Bellarmino*’s Misfortune; if I had seen him first, I should certainly have preferred him. Did not the dear Creature prefer me to every Woman in the Assembly, when every She was laying out for him? When was it in *Horatio*’s Power to give me such an Instance of Affection? Can he give me an Equipage, or any of those Things which *Bellarmino* will make me Mistress of? How vast is the Difference between being the Wife of a poor Counsellor, and the Wife of one of *Bellarmino*’s Fortune! If I marry *Horatio*, I shall triumph over no more than one Rival: but by marrying *Bellarmino*, I shall be the Envy of all my Acquaintance. What Happiness!—But can I suffer *Horatio* to die? for he hath sworn he cannot survive my Loss: but perhaps he may not die; if he should, can I prevent it? Must I sacrifice myself to him? besides, *Bellarmino* may be as miserable for me too.’ She was thus arguing with herself, when some young Ladies called her to the Walks, and a little relieved her Anxiety for the present.

The next Morning *Bellarmino* breakfasted with her in Presence of her Aunt, whom he sufficiently

ently informed of his Passion for *Leonora*; he was no sooner withdrawn, than the old Lady began to advise her Niece on this Occasion—‘ You see, Child (says she) what Fortune hath thrown in your Way; and I hope you will not withstand your own Preferment.’ *Leonora* sighing ‘ begged her not to mention any such Thing, when she knew her Engagements to *Horatio*.’ ‘ Engagements to a Fig, cry’d the Aunt; you should thank Heaven on your Knees, that you have it yet in your Power to break them. Will any Woman hesitate a Moment, whether she shall ride in a Coach, or walk on Foot all the Days of her Life?—But *Bellarmino* drives Six, and *Horatio* not even a Pair.’ ‘ Yes, but, Madam, What will the World say?’ answered *Leonora*; ‘ will not they condemn me?’ ‘ The World is always on the side of Prudence, cries the Aunt, and would surely condemn you, if you sacrificed your Interest to any Motive whatever. O, I know the World very well; and you shew your own Ignorance, my Dear, by your Objection. O’ my Conscience! the World is wiser. I have lived longer in it than you; and I assure you there is not any thing worth our Regard besides Money: nor did I ever know one Person who married from other Considerations, who did not afterwards heartily repent it. Besides, if we examine the two Men, can you prefer a sneaking Fellow, who hath been bred at a University, to a fine Gentleman just come from his Travels?—All the World must allow *Bellarmino* to be a fine Gentleman, positively a fine Gentleman, and a handsome Man.—’ ‘ Perhaps, Madam, I should not doubt, if I knew how to be handsomely off with

‘ the other.’ ‘ O leave that to me,’ says the Aunt. ‘ You know your Father hath not been acquainted with the Affair. Indeed, for my Part, I thought it might do well enough, not dreaming of such an Offer : but I’ll disengage you ; leave me to give the Fellow an Answer. I warrant you shall have no farther Trouble.’

Leonora was at length satisfied with her Aunt’s Reasoning ; and, *Bellarmino* supping with her that Evening, it was agreed he should the next Morning go to her Father and propose the Match, which she consented should be consummated at his Return.

The Aunt retired soon after Supper ; and the Lovers being left together, *Bellarmino* began in the following manner : ‘ Yes, Madam, this Coat I assure you was made at *Paris*, and I defy the best *English* Taylor even to imitate it. ‘ There is not one of them can cut, Madam, ‘ they can’t cut. If you observe how this Skirt ‘ is turned, and this Sleeve, a clumsy *English* ‘ Rascal can do nothing like it.—Pray how do ‘ you like my Liveries ?’ *Leonora* answered, she ‘ thought them very pretty.’ ‘ All *French*, says ‘ he, I assure you, except the Great Coats ; I ‘ never trust any thing more than a Great Coat ‘ to an *Englishman* ; you know one must encourage our own People what one can, especially as, before I had a Place, I was in the Country Interest, he, he, he ! but for myself, I ‘ would see the dirty Island at the Bottom of the ‘ Sea, rather than wear a single Rag of *English* ‘ Work about me ; and I am sure after you have ‘ made one Tour to *Paris*, you will be of the ‘ same Opinion with regard to your own Clothes. ‘ You can’t conceive what an Addition a *French* ‘ Dress

‘ Dress would be to your Beauty ; I positively assure you, at the first Opera I saw since I came over, I mistook the *English* Ladies for Chamber-maids, he, he, he !’

With such sort of polite Discourse did the gay *Bellarmino* entertain his beloved *Leonora*, when the Door opened on a sudden, and *Horatio* entered the Room. Here ’tis impossible to express the Surprise of *Leonora*.

‘ Poor Woman,’ says Mrs. *Slipslop*, ‘ what a terrible *Quandary* she must be in !’ ‘ Not at all,’ says Miss *Grave-Airs*, ‘ such Sluts can never be confounded.’ ‘ She must have then more than *Corinthian* Assurance,’ said *Adams* ; ‘ aye more than *Lais* herself.’

A long Silence, continued the Lady, prevailed in the whole Company : If the familiar Entrance of *Horatio* struck the greatest Astonishment into *Bellarmino*, the unexpected Presence of *Bellarmino* no less surprized *Horatio*. At length *Leonora* collecting all the Spirits she was Mistress of, addressed herself to the latter, and pretended to wonder at the Reason of so late a Visit. ‘ I should, indeed,’ answered he, ‘ have made some Apology for disturbing you at this Hour, had not my finding you in Company assured me I do not break in on your Repose. *Bellarmino* rose from his Chair, traversed the Room in a Minuet Step, and humm’d an Opera Tune, while *Horatio* advancing to *Leonora* ask’d her in a Whisper, if that Gentleman was not a Relation of hers ; to which she answered with a Smile, or rather Sneer, ‘ No, he is no Relation of mine yet ;’ adding, ‘ she could not guess the Meaning of his Question.’ *Horatio* told her softly, ‘ it did not arise from Jealousy.’

‘ Jealousy !’ cries she, ‘ I assure you ;—it would
‘ be very strange in a common Acquaintance to
‘ give himself any of those Airs.’ These Words
a little surprized *Horatio* ; but before he had time
to answer, *Bellarmino* danced up to the Lady,
and told her, ‘ he feared he interrupted some Bu-
‘ siness between her and the Gentleman.’ ‘ I
‘ can have no Business,’ said she, ‘ with the Gen-
‘ tleman, nor any other, which need be any Se-
‘ cret to you.’

‘ You’ll pardon me,’ said *Horatio*, ‘ if I desire
‘ to know who this Gentleman is, who is to be
‘ intrusted with all our Secrets.’ ‘ You’ll know
‘ soon enough,’ cries *Leonora* ; ‘ but I can’t guess
‘ what Secrets can ever pass between us of such
‘ mighty Consequence.’ ‘ No Madam !’ cries
Horatio, ‘ I’m sure you would not have me un-
‘ derstand you in earnest.’ ‘ ’Tis indifferent to
‘ me,’ says she, ‘ how you understand me ; but I
‘ think so unseasonable a Visit is difficult to be
‘ understood at all, at least when People find one
‘ engaged ; tho’ one’s Servants do not deny one,
‘ one may expect a well-bred Person should soon
‘ take the Hint.’ ‘ Madam,’ said *Horatio*, ‘ I did
‘ not imagine any Engagement with a Stranger,
‘ as it seems this Gentleman is, would have made
‘ my Visit impertinent, or that any such Cere-
‘ monies were to be preserved between Persons
‘ in our Situation.’ ‘ Sure you are in a Dream,’
says she, ‘ or would persuade me that I am in
‘ one. I know no Pretensions a common Ac-
‘ quaintance can have to lay aside the Ceremo-
‘ nies of Good-Breeding.’ ‘ Sure,’ said he, ‘ I
‘ am in a Dream ; for it is impossible I should
‘ be really esteemed a common Acquaintance by
‘ *Leonora*, after what has passed between us !’

‘ Passed

‘Passed between us! Do you intend to affront me before this Gentleman?’ D—n me, affront the Lady,’ says *Bellarmino* cocking his Hat and strutting up to *Horatio*, ‘does any Man dare affront this Lady before me, d—n me?’ ‘Hearkee, Sir,’ says *Horatio*, ‘I would advise you to lay aside that fierce Air; for I am mightily deceived, if this Lady has not a violent Desire to get your Worship a good Drubbing.’ ‘Sir,’ said *Bellarmino*, ‘I have the Honour to be her Protector, and d—n me, if I understand your Meaning.’ ‘Sir,’ answered *Horatio*, ‘she is rather your Protectress: but give yourself no more Airs, for you see I am prepared for you,’ (shaking his Whip at him) ‘Oh! *Serviteur tres humble*,’ says *Bellarmino*, ‘*Je vous entends parfaitement bien*.’ At which time the Aunt, who had heard of *Horatio*’s Visit, entered the Room, and soon satisfied all his Doubts. She convinced him that he was never more awake in his Life, and that nothing more extraordinary had happened in his three Days Absence, than a small Alteration in the Affections of *Leonora*; who now burst into Tears, and wondered what Reason she had given him to use her in so barbarous a manner. *Horatio* desired *Bellarmino* to withdraw with him: but the Ladies prevented it, by laying violent Hands on the latter; upon which, the former took his Leave without any great Ceremony, and departed, leaving the Lady with his Rival to consult for his Safety, which *Leonora* feared her Indiscretion might have endangered: but the Aunt comforted her with Assurances, that *Horatio* would not venture his Person against so accomplished a Cavalier as *Bellarmino*, and that being a

Lawyer, he would seek Revenge in his own Way, and the most they had to apprehend from him was an Action.

They at length therefore agreed to permit *Bellarmino* to retire to his Lodgings, having first settled all Matters relating to the Journey which he was to undertake in the Morning, and their Preparations for the Nuptials at his Return.

But alas! as wise Men have observed, the Seat of Valour is not the Countenance; and many a grave and plain Man, will, on a just Provocation, betake himself to that mischievous Metal, cold Iron; while Men of a fiercer Brow, and sometimes with that Emblem of Courage, a Cockade, will more prudently decline it.

Leonora was waked in the Morning, from a Visionary Coach and Six, with the dismal Account, that *Bellarmino* was run through the Body by *Horatio*; that he lay languishing at an Inn, and the Surgeons had declared the Wound mortal. She immediately leap'd out of the Bed, danced about the Room in a frantic manner, tore her Hair and beat her Breast in all the Agonies of Despair; in which sad Condition her Aunt, who likewise arose at the News, found her. The good old Lady applied her utmost Art to comfort her Niece. She told her, 'while there was Life, 'there was Hope: but that if he should die, 'her Affliction would be of no Service to *Bellarmino*, and would only expose herself, which 'might probably keep her some time without 'any future Offer; that as Matters had happened, her wisest Way would be to think no more 'of *Bellarmino*, but to endeavour to regain the 'Affections of *Horatio*.' 'Speak not to me,' cry'd the disconsolate *Leonora*; 'is it not owing to
2 'me,

‘ me, that poor *Bellarmino* has lost his Life?
 ‘ have not these cursed Charms’ (at which Words
 she looked stedfastly in the Glass) ‘ been the
 ‘ Ruin of the most charming Man of this Age?
 ‘ Can I ever bear to contemplate my own Face
 ‘ again?’ (with her Eyes still fixed on the Glass)
 ‘ Am I not the Murderess of the finest Gentle-
 ‘ man? No other Woman in the Town could
 ‘ have made any Impression on him.’ ‘Never think
 ‘ of Things past,’ cries the Aunt, ‘ think of re-
 ‘ gaining the Affections of *Horatio*.’ ‘ What Rea-
 ‘ son,’ said the Niece, ‘ have I to hope he
 ‘ would forgive me? No, I have lost him as
 ‘ well as the other, and it was your wicked Ad-
 ‘ vice which was the Occasion of all; you se-
 ‘ duced me, contrary to my Inclinations, to
 ‘ abandon poor *Horatio*,’ at which Words she
 burst into Tears; ‘ you prevailed upon me, whe-
 ‘ ther I would or no, to give up my Affections
 ‘ for him; had it not been for you, *Bellarmino*
 ‘ never would have entered into my Thoughts;
 ‘ had not his Addresses been backed by your Per-
 ‘ suasions, they never would have made any Im-
 ‘ pression on me; I should have defied all the
 ‘ Fortune and Equipage in the World; but it
 ‘ was you, it was you, who got the better of
 ‘ my Youth and Simplicity, and forced me to
 ‘ lose my dear *Horatio* for ever.’

The Aunt was almost borne down with this
 Torrent of Words; she however rallied all the
 Strength she could, and drawing her Mouth up
 in a Purse, began: ‘ I am not surprized, Niece,
 ‘ at this Ingratitude. Those who advise young
 ‘ Women for their Interest, must always expect
 ‘ such a Return: I am convinced my Brother
 ‘ will thank me for breaking off your Match

‘with *Horatio* at any Rate.’ ‘That may not be in your Power yet,’ answered *Leonora*; ‘tho’ it is very ungrateful in you to desire or attempt it, after the Presents you have received from him.’ (For indeed true it is, that many Presents, and some pretty valuable ones, had passed from *Horatio* to the old Lady: but as true it is, that *Bellarmino* when he breakfasted with her and her Niece, had complimented her with a Brilliant from his Finger, of much greater Value than all she had touched of the other.)

The Aunt’s Gall was on float to reply, when a Servant brought a Letter into the Room; which *Leonora*, hearing it came from *Bellarmino*, with great Eagerness opened, and read as follows:

Most Divine Creature,

THE Wound which I fear you have heard I received from my Rival, is not like to be so fatal as those shot into my Heart, which have been fired from your Eyes, tout-brilliant. Those are the only Cannons by which I am to fall: for my Surgeon gives me Hopes of being soon able to attend your Ruelle; till when, unless you would do me an Honour which I have scarce the Hardiess to think of, your Absence will be the greatest Anguish which can be felt by,

MADAM,

Avec toute le respecte in the World,

Your most obedient, most absolute

Devoté,

BELLARMINE.

As

As soon as *Leonora* perceived such Hopes of *Bellarmino's* Recovery, and that the Gossip *Fame* had, according to Custom, so enlarged his Danger, she presently abandoned all further Thoughts of *Horatio*, and was soon reconciled to her Aunt, who received her again into Favour, with a more Christian Forgiveness than we generally meet with. Indeed it is possible she might be a little alarmed at the Hints which her Niece had given her concerning the Presents. She might apprehend such Rumours, should they get abroad, might injure a Reputation, which by frequenting Church twice a Day, and preserving the utmost Rigour and Strictness in her Countenance and Behaviour for many Years, she had established.

Leonora's Passion returned now for *Bellarmino* with greater Force after its small Relaxation than ever. She proposed to her Aunt to make him a Visit in his Confinement, which the old Lady, with great and commendable Prudence, advised her to decline : ' For,' says she, ' should any Accident intervene to prevent your intended Match, ' too forward a Behaviour with this Lover may ' injure you in the Eyes of others. Every Woman, till she is married, ought to consider of ' and provide against the Possibility of the Affair's breaking off.' *Leonora* said, ' she should ' be indifferent to whatever might happen in such ' a Case : for she had now so absolutely placed ' her Affections on this dear Man,' (so she called him) ' that, if it was her Misfortune to lose ' him, she should for ever abandon all Thoughts ' of Mankind.' She therefore resolved to visit him, notwithstanding all the prudent Advice of her Aunt to the contrary, and that very Afternoon executed her Resolution.

The

The Lady was proceeding in her Story, when the Coach drove into the Inn where the Company were to dine, solely to the Dissatisfaction of Mr. *Adams*, whose Ears were the most hungry Part about him ; he being, as the Reader may perhaps guess, of an insatiable Curiosity, and heartily desirous of hearing the End of this *Amour*, tho' he professed he could scarce with Success to a Lady of so inconstant a Disposition.

C H A P. V.

A dreadful Quarrel which happened at the Inn where the Company dined ; with its bloody Consequences to Mr. Adams.

AS soon as the Passengers had alighted from the Coach, Mr. *Adams*, as was his Custom, made directly to the Kitchen, where he found *Joseph* sitting by the Fire, and the Hostess anointing his Leg : for the Horse which Mr. *Adams* had borrowed of his Clerk, had so violent a Propensity to kneeling, that one would have thought it had been his Trade as well as his Master's : Nor would he always give any Notice of such his Intention ; he was often found on his Knees, when the Rider least expected it. This Foible, however, was of no great Inconvenience to the Parson, who was accustomed to it, and, as his Legs almost touched the Ground when he bestrode the Beast, had but a little way to fall, and threw himself forward on such Occasions with so much Dexterity, that he never received

received any Mischief; the Horse and he frequently rolling many Paces Distance, and afterwards both getting up and meeting as good Friends as ever.

Poor *Joseph*, who had not been used to such kind of Cattle, tho' an excellent Horseman, did not so happily disengage himself: but falling with his Leg under the Beast, received a violent Contusion, to which the good Woman was, as we have said, applying a warm Hand, with some camphorated Spirits just at the time when the Parson entered the Kitchen.

He had scarce expressed his Concern for *Joseph's* Misfortune, before the Host likewise entered. He was by no means of Mr. *Tow-wouse's* gentle Disposition, and was indeed perfect Master of his House, and every thing in it but his Guests.

This surly Fellow, who always proportioned his Respect to the Appearance of a Traveller, from *God bless your Honour*, down to plain *Coming presently*, observing his Wife on her Knees to a Footman, cried out, without considering his Circumstances, 'What a Pox is the Woman about? why don't you mind the Company in the Coach? Go and ask them what they will have for Dinner?' 'My Dear,' says she, 'you know they can have nothing but what is at the Fire, which will be ready presently; and really the poor young Man's Leg is very much bruised.' At which Words, she fell to chafing more violently than before: the Bell then happening to ring, he damn'd his Wife, and bid her go in to the Company, and not stand rubbing there all Day: for he did not believe the young Fellow's Leg was so bad as he pretended; and
if

if it was, within twenty Miles he would find a Surgeon to cut it off. Upon these Words, *Adams* fetched two Strides across the Room; and snapping his Fingers over his Head, muttered aloud, He would excommunicate such a Wretch for a Farthing; for he believed the Devil had more Humanity. These Words occasioned a Dialogue between *Adams* and the Host, in which there were two or three sharp Replies, till *Joseph* bad the latter know how to behave himself to his Betters. At which the Host (having first strictly surveyed *Adams*) scornfully repeating the Word *Betters*, flew into a Rage, and telling *Joseph* he was as able to walk out of his House as he had been to walk into it, offered to lay violent Hands on him; which perceiving, *Adams* dealt him so sound a Compliment over his Face with his Fist, that the Blood immediately gushed out of his Nose in a Stream. The Host being unwilling to be out-done in Courtesy, especially by a Person of *Adams's* Figure, returned the Favour with so much Gratitude, that the Parson's Nostrils began to look a little redder than usual. Upon which he again assailed his Antagonist, and with another Stroke laid him sprawling on the Floor.

The Hostess, who was a better Wife than so furly a Husband deserved, seeing her Husband all bloody and stretched along, hastened presently to his Assistance, or rather to revenge the Blow, which, to all Appearance, was the last he would ever receive; when, lo! a Pan full of Hog's-blood, which unluckily stood on the Dresser, presented itself first to her Hands. She seized it in her Fury, and without any Reflection discharged it into the Parson's Face, and with so good an Aim,



J. Walcott inv. et sculp. Published March 1. 1742/3 by A. Millar.



that much the greater part first saluted his Countenance, and trickled thence in so large a Current down to his Beard, and over his Garments, that a more horrible Spectacle was hardly to be seen, or even imagined. All which was perceived by Mrs. *Slipslop*, who entered the Kitchin at that Instant. This good Gentlewoman, not being of a Temper so extremely cool and patient as perhaps was required to ask many Questions on this Occasion, flew with great Impetuosity at the Hostess's Cap, which, together with some of her Hair, she plucked from her Head in a Moment, giving her at the same time several hearty Cuffs in the Face, which, by frequent Practice on the inferior Servants, she had learned an excellent Knack of delivering with a good Grace. Poor *Joseph* could hardly rise from his Chair; the Parson was employed in wiping the Blood from his Eyes, which had entirely blinded him, and the Landlord was but just beginning to stir, whilst Mrs. *Slipslop* holding down the Landlady's Face with her Left Hand, made so dextrous an Use of her Right, that the poor Woman began to roar in a Key, which alarmed all the Company in the Inn.

There happened to be in the Inn at this time, besides the Ladies who arrived in the Stage-Coach, the two Gentlemen who were present at Mr. *Tow-ouse's* when *Joseph* was detained for his Horse's Meat, and whom we have before mentioned to have stopt at the Alehouse with *Adams*. There was likewise a Gentleman just returned from his Travels to *Italy*; all whom the horrid Outcry of Murder presently brought into the Kitchin, where the several Combatants were found in the Postures already described.

It was now no Difficulty to put an End to the Fray, the Conquerors being satisfied with the Vengeance they had taken, and the Conquered having no Appetite to renew the Fight. The principal Figure, and which engaged the Eyes of all, was *Adams*, who was all over covered with Blood, which the whole Company concluded to be his own; and consequently imagined him no longer for this World. But the Host, who had now recovered from his Blow, and was risen from the Ground, soon delivered them from this Apprehension, by damning his Wife for wasting the Hog's Puddings, and telling her all would have been very well, if she had not intermeddled like a B—as she was; adding he was very glad the Gentlewoman had paid her, tho' not half what she deserved. The poor Woman had indeed fared much the worst, having, besides the unmerciful Cuffs received, lost a Quantity of Hair, which Mrs. *Slipslop* in Triumph held in her left Hand.

The Traveller, addressing himself to Mrs. *Grave-airs*, desired her not to be frighten'd: for here had been only a little Boxing, which he said to their *Disgracia* the *English* were *accusomata* to: Adding; it must be however a Sight somewhat strange to him, who was just come from *Italy*, the *Italians* not being addicted to the *Cuffardo*, but *Bastenza*, says he. He then went up to *Adams*, and telling him he looked like the Ghost of *Othello*, bid him *not shake his gory Locks at him, for he could not say he did it.* *Adams* very innocently answered, Sir, *I am far from accusing you.* He then returned to the Lady, and cried, I find the bloody Gentleman is *uno insipido del nullo senso.* *Damnata di me*, if I have

have seen such a *spectaculo* in my Way from *Viterbo*.

One of the Gentlemen having learnt from the Host the Occasion of this Bustle, and being assured by him that *Adams* had struck the first Blow, whispered in his Ear : He'd warrant he would *recover*. 'Recover ! Master,' said the Host smiling : 'Yes, yes, I am not afraid of dying with a Blow or two neither ; I am not such a Chicken as that.' 'Pugh ! said the Gentleman, I mean you will recover Damages in that Action which undoubtedly you intend to bring, as soon as a Writ can be returned from *London* ; for you look like a Man of too much Spirit and Courage to suffer any one to beat you without bringing your Action against him : He must be a scandalous Fellow indeed, who would put up a Drubbing, whilst the Law is open to revenge it ; besides, he hath drawn Blood from you and spoiled your Coat ; and the Jury will give Damages for that too. An excellent new Coat upon my Word, and now not worth a Shilling !

I don't care, continued he, to intermeddle in these Cases : but you have a Right to my Evidence ; and if I am sworn, I must speak the Truth. I saw you sprawling on the Floor, and the Blood gushing from your Nostrials. You may take your own Opinion ; but was I in your Circumstances, every Drop of my Blood should convey an Ounce of Gold into my Pocket : Remember I don't advise you to go to Law ; but if your Jury were Christians, they must give swinging Damages. That's all.' 'Master,' cry'd the Host, scratching his Head, 'I have no Stomach to Law, I thank you. I have seen enough of that in the Parish, where two of
' my

‘ my Neighbours have been at Law about a House, till they have both lawed themselves in to a Goal.’ At which Words he turned about, and began to enquire again after his Hog’s Puddings ; nor would it probably have been a sufficient Excuse for his Wife, that she spilt them in his Defence, had not some Awe of the Company, especially of the *Italian Traveller*, who was a Person of great Dignity, with-held his Rage. Whilst one of the above-mentioned Gentlemen was employed, as we have seen him, on the behalf of the Landlord, the other was no less hearty on the side of Mr. *Adams*, whom he advised to bring his Action immediately. He said the Assault of the Wife was in Law the Assault of the Husband ; for they were but one Person ; and he was liable to pay Damages, which he said must be considerable, where so bloody a Disposition appeared. *Adams* answered, if it was true that they were but one Person, he had assaulted the Wife ; for he was sorry to own he had struck the Husband the first Blow. ‘ I am sorry you own it too, cries the Gentleman ; for it could not possibly appear to the Court : for here was no Evidence present but the lame Man in the Chair, whom I suppose to be your Friend, and would consequently say nothing but what made for you.’ ‘ How, Sir, says *Adams*, do you take me for a Villain, who would prosecute Revenge in cold Blood, and use unjustifiable Means to obtain it ? If you knew me and my Order, I should think you affronted both.’ At the Word Order, the Gentleman stared, (for he was too bloody to be of any modern Order of Knights) and turning hastily about, said, ‘ Every Man knew his own Business.’

Matters

Matters being now composed, the Company retired to their several Apartments, the two Gentlemen congratulating each other on the Success of their good Offices, in procuring a perfect Reconciliation between the contending Parties; and the Traveller went to his Repast, crying, as the *Italian* Poet says,

‘ *Je voi* very well, *que tutta e pace*,
‘ So send up Dinner, good *Boniface*.

The Coachman began now to grow importunate with his Passengers, whose Entrance into the Coach was retarded by Miss *Grave-airs* insisting, against the Remonstrances of all the rest, that she would not admit a Footman into the Coach; for poor *Joseph* was too lame to mount a Horse. A young Lady, who was, as it seems, an Earl’s Grand-daughter, begged it with almost Tears in her Eyes. Mr. *Adams* prayed, and Mrs. *Slipslop* scolded, but all to no Purpose. She said, ‘ she would not demean herself to ride
‘ with a Footman: that there were Waggon on
‘ the Road: that if the Master of the Coach desired it, she would pay for two Places: but
‘ would suffer no such Fellow to come in.’
‘ Madam,’ says *Slipslop*, ‘ I am sure no one can
‘ refuse another coming into a Stage-Coach.’
‘ I don’t know, Madam,’ says the Lady, ‘ I am
‘ not much used to Stage-Coaches, I seldom travel in them.’ ‘ That may be, Madam,’ replied *Slipslop*, ‘ very good People do, and some
‘ People’s Betters, for aught I know.’ Miss *Grave-airs* said, ‘ some Folks might sometimes
‘ give their Tongues a Liberty, to some People
‘ that were their Betters, which did not become
‘ them :

‘ them : for her Part, she was not used to converse with Servants.’ *Slipslop* returned, ‘ Some People kept no Servants to converse with : for her Part, she thanked Heaven she lived in a Family where there were a great many ; and had more under her own Command, than any paultry little Gentlewoman in the Kingdom.’ Miss *Grave-airs* cry’d, ‘ she believed her Mistress would not encourage such Sauciness to her Betters.’ ‘ My Betters,’ says *Slipslop*, ‘ who is my Betters, pray ?’ ‘ I am your Betters,’ answered Miss *Grave-airs*, ‘ and I’ll acquaint your Mistress.’—At which Mrs. *Slipslop* laugh’d aloud, and told her, ‘ her Lady was one of the great Gentry, and such little paultry Gentewomen, as some Folks who travelled in Stage-Coaches, would not easily come at her.’

This smart Dialogue between some People, and some Folks, was going on at the Coach-Door, when a solemn Person riding into the Inn, and seeing Miss *Grave-airs*, immediately accosted her with, ‘ Dear Child how do you ?’ She presently answered, ‘ O ! Papa, I am glad you have overtaken me.’ ‘ So am I,’ answered he : ‘ for one of our Coaches is just at hand : and there being room for you in it, you shall go no farther in the Stage, unless you desire it.’ ‘ How can you imagine I should desire it ?’ says she ; so bidding *Slipslop*, ‘ ride with her Fellow, if she pleas’d ;’ she took her Father by the Hand, who was just alighted, and walked with him into a Room.

Adams instantly asked the Coachman in a Whisper, if he knew who the Gentleman was ? The Coachman answered, he was now a Gentleman, and kept his Horse and Man : but Times are altered,

tered, Master, said he ; I remember when he was no better born than myself. Aye ! aye ! says *Adams*. My Father drove the Squire's Coach, answered he, when that very Man rode Postilion : but he is now his Steward, and a great Gentleman. *Adams* then snapped his Fingers, and cry'd, he thought *she was some such Trollop*.

Adams made haste to acquaint Mrs. *Slipslop* with this good News, as he imagined it ; but it found a Reception different from what he expected. The prudent Gentlewoman, who despised the Anger of Miss *Grave-airs*, whilst she conceived her the Daughter of a Gentleman of small Fortune, now she heard her Alliance with the upper Servants of a great Family in her Neighbourhood, began to fear her Interest with the Mistress. She wished she had not carried the Dispute so far, and began to think of endeavouring to reconcile herself to the young Lady before she left the Inn ; when luckily the Scene at *London*, which the Reader can scarce have forgotten, presented itself to her Mind, and comforted her with such Assurance, that she no longer apprehended any Enemy with her Mistress.

Every thing being now adjusted, the Company entered the Coach, which was just on its Departure, when one Lady recollected she had left her Fan, a second her Gloves, a third a Snuff-Box, and a fourth a Smelling-Bottle behind her ; to find all which occasioned some Delay, and much Swearing, to the Coachman.

As soon as the Coach had left the Inn, the Women all together fell to the Character of Miss *Grave-airs*, whom one of them declared she had suspected to be some low Creature, from the Beginning of their Journey ; and another affirmed
had

had not even the Looks of a Gentlewoman ; a third warranted she was no better than she should be ; and turning to the Lady who had related the Story in the Coach, said, ‘ Did you ever hear, Madam, any Thing so prudish as her Remarks ? Well, deliver me from the Centuriousness of such a Prude.’ The fourth added, ‘ O Madam ! all these Creatures are centurious : but for my Part, I wonder where the Wretch was bred ; indeed I must own I have seldom conversed with these mean kind of People ; so that it may appear stranger to me ; but to refuse the general Desire of a whole Company hath something in it so astonishing, that, for my Part, I own I should hardly believe it, if my own Ears had not been Witnesses to it.’ ‘ Yes, and so handsome a young Fellow,’ cries *Slipslop* : ‘ the Woman must have no Compassion in her, I believe she is more of a *Turk* than a Christian ; I am certain if she had any Christian Woman’s Blood in her Veins, the Sight of such a young Fellow must have warm’d it. Indeed there are some wretched, miserable old Objects, that turn one’s Stomach ; I should not wonder if she had refused such a one ; I am as nice as herself, and should have cared no more than herself for the Company of *stinking* old Fellows : but hold up thy Head, *Joseph*, thou art none of those ; and she who hath not *Compulsion* for thee is a *Myhummetman*, and I will maintain it.’ This Conversation made *Joseph* uneasy, as well as the Ladies ; who, perceiving the Spirits which Mrs. *Slipslop* was in, (for indeed she was not a Cup too low) began to fear the Consequence ; one of them therefore desired the Lady to conclude the Story—

Story—‘Aye Madam,’ said *Slipslop*, ‘I beg your Ladyship to give us that Story you *commen-
sated* in the Morning;’ which Request that well-bred Woman immediately complied with.

CHAP. VI.

Conclusion of the unfortunate Jilt.

LEONORA having once broke through the Bounds which Custom and Modesty impose on her Sex, soon gave an unbridled Indulgence to her Passion. Her Visits to *Bellarmino* were more constant, as well as longer, than his Surgeon’s; in a Word, she became absolutely his Nurse, made his Water-gruel, administred him his Medicines, and, notwithstanding the prudent Advice of her Aunt to the contrary, almost intirely resided in her wounded Lover’s Apartment.

The Ladies of the Town began to take her Conduct under Consideration; it was the chief Topic of Discourse at their Tea-tables, and was very severely censured by the most part; especially by *Lindamira*, a Lady whose discreet and starch Carriage, together with a constant Attendance at Church three times a Day, had utterly defeated many malicious Attacks on her own Reputation: for such was the Envy that *Lindamira*’s Virtue had attracted, that, notwithstanding her own strict Behaviour and strict Enquiry into the Lives of others, she had not been able to escape being the Mark of some Arrows herself, which however did her no Injury; a Blessing perhaps owed by her to the Clergy, who were her chief male Compani-

ons, and with two or three of whom she had been barbarously and unjustly calumniated.

Not so unjustly neither perhaps, says *Slipslop*, for the Clergy are Men, as well as other Folks.

The extreme Delicacy of *Lindamira's* Virtue was cruelly hurt by those Freedoms which *Leonora* allowed herself: She said, 'it was an Affront to her Sex; that she did not imagine it consistent with any Woman's Honour to speak to the Creature, or to be seen in her Company; and that, for her part, she should always refuse to dance at an Assembly with her, for fear of Contamination, by taking her by the Hand.

But to return to my Story: As soon as *Bellarmino* was recovered, which was somewhat within a Month from his receiving the Wound, he set out, according to Agreement, for *Leonora's* Father's, in order to propose the Match, and settle all Matters with him touching Settlements, and the like.

A little before his Arrival, the old Gentleman had received an Intimation of the Affair by the following Letter; which I can repeat *verbatim*, and which they say was written neither by *Leonora* nor her Aunt, tho' it was in a Woman's Hand. The Letter was in these Words:

S I R,

I am sorry to acquaint you that your Daughter Leonora hath acted one of the basest, as well as most simple Parts with a young Gentleman to whom she had engaged herself, and whom she hath (pardon the Word) jilted for another of inferior Fortune, notwithstanding his superior Figure. You may take what Measures you please on this Occasion; I have performed what I thought my Duty;
as

as I have, tho' unknown to you, a very great Respect for your Family.

The old Gentleman did not give himself the trouble to answer this kind Epistle; nor did he take any Notice of it after he had read it, 'till he saw *Bellarmino*. He was, to say the Truth, one of those Fathers who look on Children as an unhappy Consequence of their youthful Pleasures; which as he would have been delighted not to have had attended them, so was he no less pleased with any Opportunity to rid himself of the Incumbrance. He passed, in the World's Language, as an exceeding good Father, being not only so rapacious as to rob and plunder all Mankind to the utmost of his Power, but even to deny himself the Conveniencies and almost Necessaries of Life; which his Neighbours attributed to a Desire of raising immense Fortunes for his Children: but in Fact it was not so; he heaped up Money for its own Sake only, and looked on his Children as his Rivals, who were to enjoy his beloved Mistress, when he was incapable of possessing her, and which he would have been much more charmed with the Power of carrying along with him: nor had his Children any other Security of being his Heirs, than that the Law would constitute them such without a Will, and that he had not Affection enough for any one living to take the trouble of writing one.

To this Gentleman came *Bellarmino* on the Errand I have mentioned. His Person, his Equipage, his Family and his Estate, seemed to the Father to make him an advantageous Match for his Daughter; he therefore very readily accepted his Proposals: but when *Bellarmino* imagined the

principal Affair concluded, and began to open the incidental Matters of Fortune; the old Gentleman presently changed his Countenance, saying, ' he resolved never to marry his Daughter on a ' *Smithfield Match*; that whoever had Love for ' her to take her, would, when he died, find her ' Share of his Fortune in his Coffers: but he had ' seen such Examples of Undutifulness happen ' from the too early Generosity of Parents, that ' he had made a Vow never to part with a Shilling whilst he lived. He commended the Saying of *Solomon*, *he that spareth the Rod, spoileth the Child*: but added, he might have likewise ' asserted, that *he that spareth the Purse, saveth the Child.*' He then ran into a Discourse on the Extravagance of the Youth of the Age; whence he launched into a Dissertation on Horses, and came at length to commend those *Bellarmino* drove. That fine Gentleman, who at another Season would have been well enough pleased to dwell a little on that Subject, was now very eager to resume the Circumstance of Fortune. He said, ' he had a very high Value for the young Lady, ' and would receive her with less than he would ' any other whatever; but that even his Love to ' her made some Regard to worldly Matters necessary; for it would be a most distracting Sight ' for him to see her, when he had the Honour to ' be her Husband, in less than a Coach and Six.' The old Gentleman answered, ' Four will do, ' Four will do;' and then took a turn from Horses to Extravagance, and from Extravagance to Horses, till he came round to the Equipage again, whither he was no sooner arrived, than *Bellarmino* brought him back to the Point; but all to no Purpose; he made his Escape from that Subject in

in a Minute ; till at last the Lover declared, that
 ‘ in the present Situation of his Affairs it was im-
 ‘ possible for him, though he loved *Leonora* more
 ‘ than *tout le monde*, to marry her without any
 ‘ Fortune.’ To which the Father answered, ‘ he
 ‘ was sorry then his Daughter must lose so valu-
 ‘ able a Match ; that if he had an Inclination,
 ‘ at present it was not in his Power to advance
 ‘ a Shilling : that he had had great Losses, and
 ‘ been at great Expences on Projects ; which,
 ‘ though he had great Expectation from them,
 ‘ had yet produced him nothing : that he did not
 ‘ know what might happen hereafter, as on the
 ‘ Birth of a Son, or such Accident ; but he
 ‘ would make no Promise, or enter into any
 ‘ Article : for he would not break his Vow for
 ‘ all the Daughters in the World.’

In short, Ladies, to keep you no longer in
 suspense ; *Bellarmino* having tried every Argument
 and Persuasion which he could invent, and find-
 ing them all ineffectual, at length took his leave,
 but not in order to return to *Leonora* ; he pro-
 ceeded directly to his own Seat, whence, after a
 few Days stay, he returned to *Paris*, to the great
 Delight of the *French*, and the Honour of the
English Nation.

But as soon as he arrived at his Home, he pre-
 sently dispatched a Messenger with the following
 Epistle to *Leonora*.

Adorable and Charmante,

‘ I Am sorry to have the Honour to tell you I am
 ‘ not the heureux Person destined for your di-
 ‘ vine Arms. Your Papa hath told me so with a
 ‘ Politesse not often seen on this side Paris. You may
 ‘ perhaps guess his manner of refusing me—Ah

mon Dieu! You will certainly believe me, Madam, incapable my self of delivering this triste Message, which I intend to try the French Air to cure the Consequences of—A jamais! Cœur! Ange!—Au Diable!—If your Papa obliges you to a Marriage, I hope we shall see you at Paris, till when the Wind that flows from thence, will be the warmest dans le monde: for it will consist almost entirely of my Sighs. Adieu, ma Princesse! Ah L'Amour!

BELLARMINE.

I shall not attempt, Ladies, to describe *Leonora's* Condition, when she received this Letter. It is a Picture of Horror, which I should have as little Pleasure in drawing, as you in beholding. She immediately left the Place, where she was the Subject of Conversation and Ridicule, and retired to that House I shewed you, when I began the Story; where she hath ever since led a disconsolate Life, and deserves perhaps Pity for her Misfortunes more than our Censure, for a Behaviour to which the Artifices of her Aunt very probably contributed, and to which very young Women are often rendered too liable by that blameable Levity in the Education of our Sex.

If I was inclined to pity her, said a young Lady in the Coach, it would be for the Loss of *Horatio*; for I cannot discern any Misfortune in her missing such a Husband as *Bellarmino*.

Why I must own, says *Slipslop*, the Gentleman was a little false-hearted: but *howsoever* it was hard to have two Lovers, and get never a Husband at all—But pray, Madam, what became of *Our-ashe*?

He

He remains, said the Lady, still unmarried, and hath applied himself so strictly to his Business, that he hath raised, I hear, a very considerable Fortune. And what is remarkable, they say, he never hears the Name of *Leonora* without a Sigh, nor hath ever uttered one Syllable to charge her with her ill Conduct towards him.

C H A P. VII.

A very short Chapter, in which Parson Adams went a great Way.

THE Lady having finished her Story, received the Thanks of the Company; and now *Joseph* putting his Head out of the Coach, cried out, 'Never believe me, if yonder be not our Parson *Adams* walking along without his Horse.' 'On my Word, and so he is,' says *Slipslop*; 'and as sure as Two-pence, he hath left him behind at the Inn.' Indeed, true it is, the Parson had exhibited a fresh Instance of his Absence of Mind: for he was so pleased with having got *Joseph* into the Coach, that he never once thought of the Beast in the Stable; and finding his Legs as nimble as he desired, he sallied out brandishing a Crabstick, and had kept on before the Coach, mending and slackening his Pace occasionally, so that he had never been much more or less than a Quarter of a Mile distant from it.

Mrs. *Slipslop* desired the Coachman to overtake him, which he attempted, but in vain: for the faster he drove, the faster ran the Parson, often crying out, *Aye, aye, catch me if you can:*

till at length the Coachman swore he would as soon attempt to drive after a Greyhound; and giving the Parson two or three hearty Curfes, he cry'd, Softly, softly Boys, to his Horses, which the civil Beasts immediately obeyed.

But we will be more courteous to our Reader than he was to Mrs. *Slipshod*; and leaving the Coach and its Company to pursue their Journey, we will carry our Reader on after Parson *Adams*, who stretched forwards without once looking behind him; till having left the Coach full three Miles in his Rear, he came to a Place, where, by keeping the extremest Track to the Right, it was just barely possible for a human Creature to miss his Way. This Track however did he keep, as indeed he had a wonderful Capacity at these kinds of bare Possibilities; and travelling in it about three Miles over the Plain, he arrived at the Summit of a Hill, whence looking a great way backwards, and perceiving no Coach in Sight, he sat himself down on the Turf, and pulling out his *Æschylus* determined to wait here for its Arrival.

He had not sat long here, before a Gun going off very near a little startled him; he looked up, and saw a Gentleman within a hundred Paces taking up a Partridge, which he had just shot.

Adams stood up, and presented a Figure to the Gentleman which would have moved Laughter in many: for his Cassock had just again fallen down below his great Coat, that is to say, it reached his Knees; whereas, the Skirts of his great Coat descended no lower than half way down his Thighs: but the Gentleman's Mirth gave way to his Surprise, at beholding such a Personage in such a Place.

Adams

Adams advancing to the Gentleman, told him he hoped he had good Sport; to which the other answered, very little. ‘I see, Sir,’ says *Adams*, ‘you have smote one Partridge:’ To which the Sportsman made no Reply, but proceeded to charge his Piece.

Whilst the Gun was charging, *Adams* remained in Silence, which he at last broke, by observing, that it was a delightful Evening. The Gentleman, who had at first Sight conceived a very distasteful Opinion of the Parson, began, on perceiving a Book in his Hand, and smoaking likewise the Information of the Cassock, to change his Thoughts, and made a small Advance to Conversation on his Side, by saying, Sir, *I suppose you are not one of these Parts?*

Adams immediately told him, No: that he was a Traveller, and invited by the Beauty of the Evening and the Place to repose a little, and amuse himself with Reading. ‘I may as well repose myself too,’ said the Sportsman; ‘for I have been out this whole Afternoon, and the Devil a Bird have I seen till I came hither.’

‘Perhaps then the Game is not very plenty hereabouts,’ cries *Adams*. ‘No, Sir,’ said the Gentleman; ‘the Soldiers, who are quartered in the Neighbourhood, have killed it all.’ It is very probable,’ cries *Adams*; ‘for Shooting is their Profession.’ ‘Ay, shooting the Game,’ answered the other, ‘but I don’t see they are so forward to shoot our Enemies. I don’t like that Affair of *Carthagera*; if I had been there, I believe I should have done othergueses Things, d—n me; what’s a Man’s Life when his Country demands it? a Man who won’t sacrifice his Life for his Country, deserves to be hanged,

‘d—n me.’ Which Words he spoke with so violent a Gesture, so loud a Voice, so strong an Accent, and so fierce a Countenance, that he might have frightened a Captain of Trained-Bands at the Head of his Company; but Mr. *Adams* was not greatly subject to Fear: He told him intrepidly, that he very much approved his Virtue, but disliked his Swearing, and begged him not to addict himself to so bad a Custom, without which he said he might fight as bravely as *Achilles* did. Indeed he was charmed with this Discourse; he told the Gentleman he would willingly have gone many Miles to have met a Man of his generous Way of thinking; that if he pleased to sit down, he should be greatly delighted to commune with him: for tho’ he was a Clergyman, he would himself be ready, if thereto called, to lay down his Life for his Country.

The Gentleman sat down, and *Adams* by him; and then the latter began, as in the following Chapter, a Discourse which we have placed by itself, as it is not only the most curious in this, but perhaps in any other Book.

C H A P. VIII.

A notable Dissertation by Mr. Abraham Adams; wherein that Gentleman appears in a political Light.

‘**I** Do assure you, Sir, says he taking the Gentleman by the Hand, I am heartily glad to meet with a Man of your Kidney: for tho’ I am a poor Parson, I will be bold to say, I am an honest Man, and would not do an ill Thing

‘ Thing to be made a Bishop : Nay, tho’ it hath
 ‘ not fallen in my Way to offer so noble a Sacri-
 ‘ fice, I have not been without Opportunities
 ‘ of suffering for the Sake of my Conscience, I
 ‘ thank Heaven for them ; for I have had Relati-
 ‘ ons, tho’ I say it, who made some Figure in
 ‘ the World ; particularly a Nephew, who was
 ‘ a Shopkeeper, and an Alderman of a Corpora-
 ‘ tion. He was a good Lad, and was under my
 ‘ Care when a Boy, and I believe would do
 ‘ what I bade him to his dying Day. Indeed, it
 ‘ looks like extreme Vanity in me, to affect be-
 ‘ ing a Man of such Consequence, as to have so
 ‘ great an Interest in an Alderman ; but others
 ‘ have thought so too, as manifestly appeared by
 ‘ the Rector, whose Curate I formerly was, send-
 ‘ ing for me on the Approach of an Election,
 ‘ and telling me, if I expected to continue in his
 ‘ Cure, that I must bring my Nephew to vote
 ‘ for one Colonel *Courtly*, a Gentleman whom
 ‘ I had never heard Tidings of ’till that Instant.
 ‘ I told the Rector, I had no Power over my
 ‘ Nephew’s Vote, (God forgive me for such Pre-
 ‘ varication !) that I supposed he would give it ac-
 ‘ cording to his Conscience ; that I would by no
 ‘ means endeavour to influence him to give it
 ‘ otherwise. He told me, it was in vain to equi-
 ‘ vocate : that he knew I had already spoke to
 ‘ him in favour of Esquire *Fickle* my Neighbour ;
 ‘ and indeed it was true I had : for it was at a
 ‘ Season when the *Church was in Danger*, and
 ‘ when all good Men expected they knew not
 ‘ what would happen to us all. I then answer-
 ‘ ed boldly, If he thought I had given my Pro-
 ‘ mise, he affronted me, in proposing any Breach
 ‘ of it. Not to be too prolix : I persevered, and

‘ so did my Nephew, in the Esquire’s Interest,
‘ who was chose chiefly through his Means ; and
‘ so I lost my Curacy. Well, Sir, but do
‘ you think the Esquire ever mentioned a Word
‘ of the Church ? *Ne verbum quidem, ut ita di-*
‘ *cam* ; within two Years he got a Place, and
‘ hath ever since lived in *London* ; where I have
‘ been informed, (but God forbid I should be-
‘ lieve that) that he never so much as goeth to
‘ Church. I remained, Sir, a considerable time
‘ without any Cure, and lived a full Month on
‘ one Funeral Sermon, which I preached on the
‘ Indisposition of a Clergyman : but this by the
‘ Bye. At last, when Mr. *Fickle* got his Place,
‘ Colonel *Courtly* stood again ; and who should
‘ make Interest for him, but Mr. *Fickle* himself ?
‘ that very identical Mr. *Fickle*, who had for-
‘ merly told me, the Colonel was an Enemy to
‘ both the Church and State, had the Confidence
‘ to solicit my Nephew for him ; and the Colo-
‘ nel himself offered me to make me Chaplain
‘ to his Regiment, which I refused in favour of
‘ Sir *Oliver Hearty*, who told us he would sa-
‘ crifice every thing to his Country : and I be-
‘ lieve he would, except his Hunting, which he
‘ stuck so close to, that in five Years together
‘ he went but twice up to Parliament ; and one
‘ of those Times, I have been told, never was
‘ within Sight of the House. However, he was
‘ a worthy Man, and the best Friend I ever had :
‘ for by his Interest with a Bishop he got me
‘ replaced into my Curacy, and gave me eight
‘ Pounds out of his own Pocket to buy me a
‘ Gown and Cassock, and furnish my House.
‘ He had our Interest while he lived, which was
‘ not many Years. On his Death, I had fresh
‘ Applica-

‘ Applications made to me; for all the World
 ‘ knew the Interest I had in my good Nephew,
 ‘ who now was a leading Man in the Corpora-
 ‘ tion; and Sir *Thomas Booby* buying the Estate
 ‘ which had been Sir *Oliver’s*, proposed himself
 ‘ a Candidate. He was then a young Gentle-
 ‘ man just come from his Travels; and it did
 ‘ me good to hear him discourse on Affairs, which
 ‘ for my Part I know nothing of. If I had been
 ‘ Master of a thousand Votes, he should have
 ‘ had them all. I engaged my Nephew in his
 ‘ Interest; and he was elected, and a very fine
 ‘ Parliament Man he was. They tell me he
 ‘ made Speeches of an Hour long; and I have
 ‘ been told very fine ones: but he could never
 ‘ persuade the Parliament to be of his Opinion.
 ‘ —*Non omnia possumus omnes*. He promised me
 ‘ a Living, poor Man; and I believe I should
 ‘ have had it, but an Accident happened; which
 ‘ was, that my Lady had promised it before, un-
 ‘ known to him. This indeed I never heard till
 ‘ afterwards: for my Nephew, who died about a
 ‘ Month before the Incumbent, always told me
 ‘ I might be assured of it. Since that time, Sir
 ‘ *Thomas*, poor Man, had always so much Busi-
 ‘ ness, that he never could find Leisure to see me.
 ‘ I believe it was partly my Lady’s Fault too;
 ‘ who did not think my Dress good enough for
 ‘ the Gentry at her Table. However, I must
 ‘ do him the Justice to say, he never was un-
 ‘ grateful; and I have always found his Kitchen,
 ‘ and his Cellar too, open to me; many a time
 ‘ after Service on a *Sunday*, for I preach at four
 ‘ Churches, have I recruited my Spirits with a
 ‘ Glass of his Ale. Since my Nephew’s Death
 ‘ the Corporation is in other Hands; and I am

‘ not a Man of that Consequence I was formerly.
‘ I have now no longer any Talents to lay out
‘ in the Service of my Country; and to whom
‘ nothing is given, of him can nothing be re-
‘ quired. However, on all proper Seasons, such
‘ as the Approach of an Election, I throw a
‘ suitable Dash or two into my Sermons; which
‘ I have the Pleasure to hear is not disagreeable
‘ to Sir *Thomas*, and the other honest Gentlemen
‘ my Neighbours, who have all promised me
‘ these five Years, to procure an Ordination for
‘ a Son of mine, who is now near thirty, hath
‘ an infinite Stock of Learning, and is, I thank
‘ Heaven, of an unexceptionable Life; tho’, as
‘ he was never at an University, the Bishop re-
‘ fuses to ordain him. Too much Care cannot
‘ indeed be taken in admitting any to the sacred
‘ Office; tho’ I hope he will never act so as to
‘ be a Disgrace to any Order: but will serve his
‘ God and his Country to the utmost of his Power,
‘ as I have endeavoured to do before him; nay,
‘ and will lay down his Life whenever called to
‘ that Purpose. I am sure I have educated him
‘ in those Principles; so that I have acquitted my
‘ Duty, and shall have nothing to answer for on
‘ that account: but I do not distrust him; for
‘ he is a good Boy; and, if Providence should
‘ throw it in his way to be of as much consequence
‘ in a public Light, as his Father once was; I
‘ can answer for him, he will use his Talents as
‘ honestly as I have done.’

C H A P. IX.

In which the Gentleman descants on Bravery and heroic Virtue, 'till an unlucky Accident puts an end to the Discourse.

THE Gentleman highly commended Mr. Adams for his good Resolutions, and told him, ' he hoped his Son would tread in his Steps ; ' adding, ' that if he would not die for his Country, he would not be worthy to live in it. I'd make no more of shooting a Man that would not die for his Country, than—

' Sir,' said he, ' I have disinherited a Nephew who is in the Army ; because he would not exchange his Commission, and go to the *West-Indies*. I believe the Rascal is a Coward, tho' he pretends to be in Love forsooth. I would have all such Fellows hanged, Sir, I would have them hanged.' Adams answered, ' that would be too severe : That Men did not make themselves ; and if Fear had too much Ascendance in the Mind, the Man was rather to be pitied than abhorred : That Reason and Time might teach him to subdue it.' ' He said, a Man might be a Coward at one time, and brave at another. *Homer*,' says he, ' who so well understood and copied Nature, hath taught us this Lesson ; for *Paris* fights, and *Hector* runs away : nay, we have a mighty Instance of this in the History of later Ages, no longer ago than the 705th Year of *Rome*, when the great *Pompey*, who had won so many Battles, and been honoured

‘ honoured with so many Triumphs, and of
‘ whose Valour several Authors, especially *Cicero*
‘ and *Paterculus*, have formed such Elogiums;
‘ this very *Pompey* left the Battle of *Pharsalia*
‘ before he had lost it, and retreated to his Tent,
‘ where he sat like the most pusillanimous Rascal
‘ in a Fit of Despair, and yielded a Victory,
‘ which was to determine the Empire of the
‘ World, to *Cæsar*. I am not much travelled in
‘ the History of modern Times, that is to say,
‘ these last thousand Years: but those who are,
‘ can, I make no question, furnish you with pa-
‘ rallel Instances.’ He concluded therefore, that
had he taken any such hasty Resolutions against
his Nephew, he hoped he would consider better,
and retract them. The Gentleman answered with
great Warmth, and talked much of Courage and
his Country, ’till perceiving it grew late, he asked
Adams, ‘ what Place he intended for that Night?’
He told him, ‘ he waited there for the Stage-
‘ Coach.’ ‘ The Stage-Coach! Sir,’ said the
Gentleman, ‘ they are all past by long ago. You
‘ may see the last yourself almost three Miles be-
‘ fore us.’ ‘ I protest and so they are,’ cries
Adams, ‘ then I must make haste and follow them.’
The Gentleman told him, ‘ he would hardly be
‘ able to overtake them; and that if he did not
‘ know his Way, he would be in danger of losing
‘ himself on the Downs; for it would be presently
‘ dark; and he might ramble about all Night,
‘ and perhaps find himself farther from his Jour-
‘ ney’s End in the Morning than he was now.
‘ He advised him therefore to accompany him to
‘ his House, which was very little out of his
‘ Way,’ assuring him, ‘ that he would find some
‘ Country-Fellow in his Parish, who would con-
‘ duct

‘ duct him for Sixpence to the City where he was
 ‘ going.’ *Adams* accepted this Proposal, and on
 they travelled, the Gentleman renewing his Dis-
 course on Courage, and the Infamy of not being
 ready at all times to sacrifice our Lives to our
 Country. Night overtook them much about the
 same time as they arrived near some Bushes:
 whence, on a sudden, they heard the most vio-
 lent Shrieks imaginable in a female Voice. *Adams*
 offered to snatch the Gun out of his Companion’s
 Hand. ‘ What are you doing ?’ said he. ‘ Do-
 ‘ ing!’ says *Adams*, ‘ I am hastening to the As-
 ‘ sistance of the poor Creature whom some Vil-
 ‘ lains are murdering.’ ‘ You are not mad e-
 ‘ nough, I hope,’ says the Gentleman trem-
 bling: ‘ Do you consider this Gun is only charged
 ‘ with Shot, and that the Robbers are most pro-
 ‘ bably furnished with Pistols loaded with Bullets?
 ‘ This is no Business of ours; let us make as
 ‘ much haste as possible out of the way, or we
 ‘ may fall into their Hands ourselves.’ The
 Shrieks now encreasing, *Adams* made no Answer,
 but snapt his Fingers, and brandishing his Crab-
 stick, made directly to the Place whence the Voice
 issued; and the Man of Courage made as much
 Expedition towards his own Home, whither he
 escaped in a very short time without once looking
 behind him: where we will leave him, to con-
 template his own Bravery, and to censure the
 want of it in others; and return to the good *A-*
Adams, who, on coming up to the Place whence
 the Noise proceeded, found a Woman struggling
 with a Man, who had thrown her on the Ground,
 and had almost overpowered her. The great A-
 bilities of Mr. *Adams* were not necessary to have
 formed a right Judgment of this Affair on the first
 sight.

fight. He did not therefore want the Entreaties of the poor Wretch to assist her ; but lifting up his Crabstick, he immediately levelled a Blow at that Part of the Ravisher's Head, where, according to the Opinion of the Ancients, the Brains of some Persons are deposited, and which he had undoubtedly let forth, had not Nature, (who, as wise Men have observed, equips all Creatures with what is most expedient for them) taken a provident Care, (as she always doth with those she intends for Encounters) to make this Part of the Head three times as thick as those of ordinary Men, who are designed to exercise Talents which are vulgarly called rational, and for whom as Brains are necessary, she is obliged to leave some room for them in the Cavity of the Skull: whereas, those Ingredients being entirely useless to Persons of the heroic Calling, she hath an Opportunity of thickening the Bone, so as to make it less subject to any Impression, or liable to be cracked or broken ; and indeed, in some who are predestined to the Command of Armies and Empires, she is supposed sometimes to make that Part perfectly solid.

As a Game-Cock, when engaged in amorous Toying with a Hen, if perchance he espies another Cock at hand, immediately quits his Female, and opposes himself to his Rival ; so did the Ravisher, on the Information of the Crabstick, immediately leap from the Woman, and hasten to assail the Man. He had no Weapons but what Nature had furnished him with. However, he clenched his Fist, and presently darted it at that Part of *Adams's* Breast where the Heart is lodged. *Adams* staggered at the Violence of the Blow, when, throwing away his Staff, he likewise clenched





J. Hulett inv. et sculp. Publish'd March 1.st 1742 by J. Miller.

clenched that Fist which we have before commemorated, and would have discharged it full in the Breast of his Antagonist, had he not dextrously caught it with his left Hand, at the same time darting his Head, (which some modern Heroes, of the lower Class, use, like the Battering-Ram of the Ancients, for a Weapon of Offence; another Reason to admire the Cunningness of Nature, in composing it of those impenetrable Materials) dashing his Head, I say, into the Stomach of *Adams*, he tumbled him on his Back, and not having any regard to the Laws of Heroism, which would have restrained him from any farther Attack on his Enemy 'till he was again on his Legs, he threw himself upon him, and laying hold on the Ground with his left Hand, he with his right belaboured the Body of *Adams* 'till he was weary, and indeed, 'till he concluded (to use the Language of fighting) *that he had done his Business*; or, in the Language of Poetry, *that he had sent him to the Shades below*; in plain English, *that he was dead*.

But *Adams*, who was no Chicken, and could bear a Drubbing as well as any boxing Champion in the Universe, lay still only to watch his Opportunity; and now perceiving his Antagonist to pant with his Labours, he exerted his utmost Force at once, and with such Success, that he overturned him, and became his Superior; when fixing one of his Knees in his Breast, he cried out in an exulting Voice, *It is my turn now*: and after a few Minutes constant Application, he gave him so dextrous a Blow just under his Chin, that the Fellow no longer retained any Motion, and *Adams* began to fear he had struck him once too often; for he often asserted, 'he should be con-
'cerned

‘ cerned to have the Blood of even the Wicked
‘ upon him.’

Adams got up, and called aloud to the young Woman,—‘ Be of good cheer, Damsel, said he, ‘ you are no longer in danger of your Ravisher, ‘ who, I am terribly afraid, lies dead at my Feet ; ‘ but God forgive me what I have done in defence ‘ of Innocence.’ The poor Wretch, who had been some time in recovering Strength enough to rise, and had afterwards, during the Engagement, stood trembling, being disabled by Fear, even from running away, hearing her Champion was victorious, came up to him, but not without Apprehensions, even of her Deliverer ; which, however, she was soon relieved from, by his courteous Behaviour and gentle Words. They were both standing by the Body, which lay Motionless on the Ground, and which *Adams* wished to see stir much more than the Woman did, when he earnestly begged her to tell him, ‘ by what ‘ Misfortune she came, at such a time of Night, ‘ into so lonely a Place ?’ She acquainted him, ‘ she was travelling towards *London*, and had accidentally met with the Person from whom he ‘ had delivered her, who told her he was likewise on his Journey to the same Place, and ‘ would keep her Company : an Offer which, ‘ suspecting no Harm, she had accepted ; that he ‘ told her, they were at a small Distance from ‘ an Inn where she might take up her Lodging ‘ that Evening, and he would shew her a nearer ‘ Way to it than by following the Road. That ‘ if she had suspected him, (which she did not, ‘ he spoke so kindly to her,) being alone on ‘ these Downs in the dark, she had no human ‘ Means to avoid him ; that therefore she put her
‘ whole

‘ whole Trust in Providence, and walk’d on, ex-
 ‘ pecting every Moment to arrive at the Inn ;
 ‘ when, on a sudden, being come to those Bushes,
 ‘ he desired her to stop, and after some rude
 ‘ Kisses, which she resisted, and some Entreaties,
 ‘ which she rejected, he laid violent Hands on
 ‘ her, and was attempting to execute his wicked
 ‘ Will, when, she thanked G—, he timely
 ‘ came up and prevented him.’ *Adams* encour-
 aged her for saying she had put her whole Trust
 in Providence, and told her, ‘ He doubted not
 ‘ but Providence had sent him to her Deliver-
 ‘ ance, as a Reward for that Trust. He wished
 ‘ indeed he had not deprived the wicked Wretch
 ‘ of Life, but G—’s Will be done ; he said, he
 ‘ hoped the Goodness of his Intention would
 ‘ excuse him in the next World, and he trusted
 ‘ in her Evidence to acquit him in this.’ He was
 then silent, and began to consider with himself,
 whether it would be properer to make his Escape,
 or to deliver himself into the Hands of Justice ;
 which Meditation ended, as the Reader will see
 in the next Chapter.

C H A P.

C H A P. X.

Giving an Account of the strange Catastrophe of the preceding Adventure, which drew poor Adams into fresh Calamities ; and who the Woman was who owed the Preservation of her Chastity to his victorious Arm.

THE Silence of *Adams*, added to the Darkness of the Night and Loneliness of the Place, struck dreadful Apprehensions into the poor Woman's Mind : She began to fear as great an Enemy in her Deliverer, as he had delivered her from ; and as she had not Light enough to discover the Age of *Adams*, and the Benevolence visible in his Countenance, she suspected he had used her as some very honest Men have used their Country ; and had rescued her out of the Hands of one Rifer, in order to rifle her himself. Such were the Suspicions she drew from his Silence : but indeed they were ill-grounded. He stood over his vanquished Enemy, wisely weighing in his Mind the Objections which might be made to either of the two Methods of proceeding mentioned in the last Chapter, his Judgment sometimes inclining to the one, and sometimes to the other ; for both seemed to him so equally adviseable, and so equally dangerous, that probably he would have ended his Days, at least two or three of them, on that very Spot, before he had taken any Resolution : At length he lifted up his Eyes, and spied a Light at a Distance,

stance, to which he instantly addressed himself with *Heus tu, Traveller, heus tu!* He presently heard several Voices, and perceived the Light approaching toward him. The Persons who attended the Light began some to laugh, others to sing, and others to hollow, at which the Woman testified some Fear, (for she had concealed her Suspicions of the Parson himself,) but *Adams* said, ‘thy Trust in the same Providence, which hath hitherto protected thee, and never will forsake the Innocent.’ These People who now approached were no other, Reader, than a Set of young Fellows, who came to these Bushes in pursuit of a Diversion which they call *Bird batting*. This, if thou art ignorant of it (as perhaps if thou hast never travelled beyond *Kensington, Islington, Hackney*, or the *Borough*, thou mayst be) I will inform thee, is performed by holding a large Clap-Net before a Lantern, and at the same time beating the Bushes: for the Birds, when they are disturbed from their Places of Rest, or Roost, immediately make to the Light, and so are enticed within the Net. *Adams* immediately told them what had happened, and desired them, ‘to hold the Lantern to the Face of the Man on the Ground, for he feared he had smote him fatally.’ But indeed his Fears were frivolous; for the Fellow, tho’ he had been stunned by the last Blow he received, had long since recovered his Senses, and finding himself quit of *Adams*, had listened attentively to the Discourse between him and the young Woman; for whose Departure he had patiently waited, that he might likewise withdraw himself, having no longer Hopes of succeeding in his Desires, which were
moreover

moreover almost as well cooled by Mr. *Adams*, as they could have been by the young Woman herself, had he obtained his utmost Wish. This Fellow, who had a Readiness at improving any Accident, thought he might now play a better Part than that of a dead Man ; and accordingly, the Moment the Candle was held to his Face, he leapt up, and laying hold on *Adams*, cried out, ‘ No, Villain, I am not dead, though you
‘ and your wicked Whore might well think me
‘ so, after the barbarous Cruelties you have exercised on me. Gentlemen, said he, you are
‘ luckily come to the Assistance of a poor Traveller, who would otherwise have been robbed
‘ and murdered by this vile Man and Woman,
‘ who led me hither out of my Way from the
‘ High-Road, and both falling on me have used
‘ me as you see.’ *Adams* was going to answer, when one of the young Fellows cry’d, ‘ D—n
‘ them, let’s carry them both before the Justice.’ The poor Woman began to tremble, and *Adams* lifted up his Voice, but in vain. Three or four of them laid Hands on him, and one holding the Lantern to his Face, they all agreed, *he had the most villainous Countenance* they ever beheld ; and an Attorney’s Clerk who was of the Company declared, *he was sure he had remembred him at the Bar*. As to the Woman, her Hair was dishevelled in the Struggle, and her Nose had bled, so that they could not perceive whether she was handsome or ugly : but they said her Fright plainly discovered her Guilt. And searching her Pockets, as they did those of *Adams* for Money, which the Fellow said he had lost, they found in her Pocket a Purse with some Gold in it, which abundantly convinced them, especially as
the

the Fellow offered to swear to it. Mr. *Adams* was found to have no more than one Halfpenny about him. This the Clerk said, 'was a great Presumption that he was an old Offender, by cunningly giving all the Booty to the Woman.' To which all the rest readily assented.

This Accident promising them better Sport, than what they had proposed, they quitted their Intention of catching Birds, and unanimously resolved to proceed to the Justice with the Offenders. Being informed what a desperate Fellow *Adams* was, they tied his Hands behind him; and having hid their Nets among the Bushes, and the Lantern being carried before them, they placed the two Prisoners in their Front, and then began their March: *Adams* not only submitting patiently to his own Fate, but comforting and encouraging his Companion under her sufferings.

Whilst they were on their Way, the Clerk informed the rest, that this Adventure would prove a very beneficial one: for that they would be all entitled to their Proportions of 80 *l.* for apprehending the Robbers. This occasioned a Contention concerning the Parts which they had severally borne in taking them; one insisting, he ought to have the greatest Share; for he had first laid his Hands on *Adams*; another claiming a superior Part, for having first held the Lantern to the Man's Face on the Ground, by which, he said, 'the whole was discovered.' The Clerk claimed four Fifths of the Reward, for having proposed to search the Prisoners; and likewise the carrying them before the Justice: he said indeed, 'in strict Justice he ought to have the whole.' These Claims, however, they at last consented to refer to a future Decision, but seem'd

all to agree that the Clerk was entitled to a Moiety. They then debated what Money should be allotted to the young Fellow, who had been employed only in holding the Nets. He very modestly said, 'That he did not apprehend any large Proportion would fall to his Share ; but hoped they would allow him something : he desired them to consider, that they had assigned their Nets to his Care, which prevented him from being as forward as any in laying hold of the Robbers, (for so these innocent People were called ;) that if he had not occupied the Nets, some other must : concluding however, that he should be contented with the smallest Share imaginable, and should think that rather their Bounty than his Merit.' But they were all unanimous in excluding him from any Part whatever, the Clerk particularly swearing, ' if they gave him a Shilling, they might do what they pleased with the rest ; for he would not concern himself with the Affair.' This Contention was so hot, and so totally engaged the Attention of all the Parties, that a dextrous nimble Thief, had he been in Mr. *Adams's* Situation, would have taken care to have given the Justice no Trouble that Evening. Indeed it required not the Art of a *Shepherd* to escape, especially as the Darkeness of the Night would have so much befriended him : but *Adams* trusted rather to his Innocence than his Heels, and without thinking of Flight, which was easy, or Resistance (which was impossible, as there were six lusty young Fellows, besides the Villain himself, present) he walked with perfect Resignation the Way they thought proper to conduct him.

Adams

Adams frequently vented himself in Ejaculations during their Journey; at last poor *Joseph Andrews* occurring to his Mind, he could not refrain sighing forth his Name, which being heard by his Companion in Affliction, she cried, with some Vehemence, ‘ Sure I should know that Voice; ‘ you cannot certainly, Sir, be Mr. *Abraham Adams*?’ ‘ Indeed Damsel,’ says he, ‘ that is ‘ my Name; there is something also in your ‘ Voice, which persuades me I have heard it before.’ ‘ La, Sir,’ says she, ‘ don’t you remember poor *Fanny*?’ ‘ How *Fanny*!’ answered *Adams*, ‘ indeed I very well remember ‘ you; what can have brought you hither?’ ‘ I have told you, Sir,’ replied she, ‘ I was travelling towards *London*; but I thought you mentioned *Joseph Andrews*, pray what is become of ‘ him?’ ‘ I left him, Child, this Afternoon,’ said *Adams*, ‘ in the Stage-Coach, in his way towards our Parish, whither he is going to see ‘ you.’ ‘ To see me! La, Sir,’ answered *Fanny*, ‘ sure you jeer me; what should he be ‘ going to see me for?’ ‘ Can you ask that?’ replied *Adams*. ‘ I hope *Fanny* you are not ‘ constant; I assure you he deserves much better ‘ of you.’ ‘ La! Mr. *Adams*,’ said she, ‘ what ‘ is Mr. *Joseph* to me? I am sure I never had any ‘ thing to say to him, but as one Fellow-Servant ‘ might to another.’ ‘ I am sorry to hear this,’ said *Adams*; ‘ a virtuous Passion for a young ‘ Man, is what no Woman need be ashamed of. ‘ You either do not tell me Truth, or you are ‘ false to a very worthy Man.’ *Adams* then told her what had happened at the Inn, to which she listened very attentively; and a Sigh often escaped from her, notwithstanding her utmost Endeavour

vours to the contrary, nor could she prevent herself from asking a thousand Questions, which would have assured any one but *Adams*, who never saw farther into People than they desired to let him, of the Truth of a Passion she endeavoured to conceal. Indeed the Fact was, that this poor Girl having heard of *Joseph's* Misfortune by some of the Servants belonging to the Coach, which we have formerly mentioned to have stopt at the Inn while the poor Youth was confined to his Bed, that Instant abandoned the Cow she was milking, and taking with her a little Bundle of Clothes under her Arm, and all the Money she was worth in her own Purse, without consulting any one, immediately set forward, in pursuit of one, whom, notwithstanding her Shyness to the Parson, she loved with inexpressible Violence, though with the purest and most delicate Passion. This Shyness therefore, as we trust it will recommend her Character to all our Female Readers, and not greatly surprize such of our Males as are well acquainted with the younger part of the other Sex, we shall not give ourselves any Trouble to vindicate.

CHAP. XI.

What happened to them while before the Justice. A Chapter very full of Learning.

THEIR Fellow-Travellers were so engaged in the hot Dispute concerning the Division of the Reward for apprehending these innocent People, that they attended very little to their Discourse. They were now arrived at the Justice's House,

House, and had sent one of his Servants in to acquaint his Worship, that they had taken two Robbers, and brought them before him. The Justice, who was just returned from a Fox-Chase, and had not yet finished his Dinner, ordered them to carry the Prisoners into the Stable, whither they were attended by all the Servants in the House, and all the People in the Neighbourhood, who flocked together to see them with as much Curiosity as if there was something uncommon to be seen, or that a Rogue did not look like other People.

The Justice now being in the Height of his Mirth and his Cups, bethought himself of the Prisoners; and telling his Company he believed they should have good Sport in their Examination, he ordered them into his Presence. They had no sooner entered the Room, than he began to revile them, saying, ‘ that Robberies on the Highway were now grown so frequent, that People could not sleep safely in their Beds, and assured them they both should be made Examples of at the ensuing Affizes.’ After he had gone on some time in this manner, he was reminded by his Clerk, ‘ that it would be proper to take the Deposition of the Witnesses against them.’ Which he bid him do, and he would light his Pipe in the mean time. Whilst the Clerk was employed in writing down the Depositions of the Fellow who had pretended to be robbed, the Justice employed himself in cracking Jest on poor Fanny, in which he was seconded by all the Company at Table. One asked, ‘ whether she was to be indicted for a *Highwayman*?’ Another whispered in her Ear, ‘ if she had not provided herself a great Belly, he was at her service.’

A third said, ‘ he warranted she was a Relation ‘ of *Turpin*.’ To which one of the Company, a great Wit, shaking his Head, and then his Sides, answered, ‘ he believed she was nearer related to *Turpis* ;’ at which there was an universal Laugh. They were proceeding thus with the poor Girl, when somebody smoking the Calf-sock peeping forth from under the Great Coat of *Adams*, cried out, ‘ What have we here, a Parson ?’ ‘ How, Sirrah,’ says the Justice,’ ‘ do you go a robbing in the Dress of a Clergyman ? let me tell you, your Habit will not entitle you to the *Benefit of the Clergy*.’ ‘ Yes,’ said the witty Fellow, ‘ he will have one Benefit ‘ of Clergy, he will be exalted above the Heads ‘ of the People ;’ at which there was a second Laugh. And now the witty Spark, seeing his Jokes take, began to rise in Spirits ; and turning to *Adams*, challenged him to *cap* Verses, and provoking him by giving the first Blow, he repeated,

Molle meum levibus cord est vilebile Telis.

Upon which *Adams*, with a Look full of ineffable Contempt, told him, he deserved scourging for his Pronunciation. The witty Fellow answered, ‘ What do you deserve, Doctor, for ‘ not being able to answer the first time ?’ Why I’ll give you one you Blockhead—with an *S*.

Si licet, ut fulvum spectatur in ignibus haurum.

What can’st not with an *M* neither ? Thou art a pretty Fellow for a Parson—. Why did’st not steal some of the Parson’s *Latin* as well as his

his Gown ? Another at the Table then answered, ‘ if he had, you would have been too hard for him ; I remember you at the College a very Devil at this Sport ; I have seen you catch a fresh Man : for no body that knew you, would engage with you.’ ‘ I have forgot those things now,’ cried the Wit. ‘ I believe I could have done pretty well formerly.—Let’s see, what did I end with—an *M* again—ay—

Mars, Bacchus, Apollo, virorum.

‘ I could have done it once.’—‘ Ah ! Evil betide you, and so you can now,’ said the other, ‘ no body in this Country will undertake you.’ *Adams* could hold no longer ; ‘ Friend,’ said he, ‘ I have a Boy not above eight Years old, who would instruct thee, that the last Verse runs thus :

Ut sunt Divorum, Mars, Bacchus, Apollo, virorum.

‘ I’ll hold thee a Guinea of that,’ said the Wit, throwing the Money on the Table.—‘ And I’ll go your Halves,’ cries the other. ‘ Done,’ answered *Adams* ; but upon applying to his Pocket, he was forced to retract, and own he had no Money about him ; which set them all a laughing, and confirmed the Triumph of his Adversary, which was not moderate, any more than the Approbation he met with from the whole Company, who told *Adams* he must go a little longer to School, before he attempted to attack that Gentleman in *Latin*.

The Clerk having finished the Depositions, as well of the Fellow himself, as of those who apprehended

prehended the Prisoners, delivered them to the Justice; who having sworn the several Witnesses, without reading a Syllable, ordered his Clerk to make the *Mittimus*.

Adams then said, 'he hoped he should not be condemned unheard.' 'No, no,' cries the Justice, 'you will be asked what you have to say for yourself, when you come on your Trial: we are not trying you now; I shall only commit you to Goal: if you can prove your Innocence at *Size*, you will be found *Ignoramus*, and so no Harm done.' 'Is it no Punishment, Sir, for an innocent Man to lie several Months in Goal?' cries *Adams*: 'I beg you would at least hear me before you sign the *Mittimus*.' 'What signifies all you can say?' says the Justice, 'is it not here in black and white against you? I must tell you, you are a very impertinent Fellow, to take up so much of my time. — So make haste with his *Mittimus*.'

The Clerk now acquainted the Justice, that among other suspicious Things, as a Penknife, &c. found in *Adams*'s Pocket, they had discovered a Book written, as he apprehended, in Cyphers: for no one could read a Word in it. 'Ay,' says the Justice, 'the Fellow may be more than a common Robber, he may be in a Plot against the Government. — Produce the Book.' Upon which the poor Manuscript of *Æschylus*, which *Adams* had transcribed with his own Hand, was brought forth; and the Justice looking at it shook his Head, and turning to the Prisoner asked the meaning of those Cyphers. 'Cyphers!' answered *Adams*, 'it is a Manuscript of *Æschylus*.' 'Who? who?' said the Justice. *Adams* repeated, '*Æschylus*.' 'That is an outlandish Name,

‘ Name,’ cried the Clerk. ‘ A fictitious Name
 ‘ rather, I believe, said the Justice.’ One of the
 Company declared it looked very much like *Greek*.
 ‘ *Greek* ?’ said the Justice, ‘ why ’tis all Writing.’
 ‘ No,’ says the other, ‘ I don’t positively say
 ‘ it is so: for it is a very long time since I have
 ‘ seen any Greek. There’s one,’ says he, turn-
 ing to the Parson of the Parish, who was pre-
 sent, ‘ will tell us immediately.’ The Parson tak-
 ing up the Book, and putting on his Spectacles and
 Gravity together, muttered some Words to him-
 self, and then pronounced aloud—‘ Ay indeed it
 ‘ is a *Greek* Manuscript, a very fine Piece of
 ‘ Antiquity. I make no doubt but it was stolen
 ‘ from the same Clergyman from whom the
 ‘ Rogue took the Cassock.’ ‘ What did the
 ‘ Rascal mean by his *Æschylus* ?’ says the Justice.
 ‘ Pooh !’ answered the Doctor, with a contemp-
 tuous Grin, ‘ do you think that Fellow knows
 ‘ any thing of this Book ? *Æschylus* ! ho ! ho ! ho !
 ‘ I see now what it is. —A Manuscript of one of
 ‘ the Fathers. I know a Nobleman who would
 ‘ give a great deal of Money for such a Piece of
 ‘ Antiquity. —Ay, ay, Question and Answer.
 ‘ The Beginning is the Catechism in *Greek*.—
 ‘ Ay,—Ay,—*Pollaki toi*—What’s your Name ?’
 ‘ —Ay, what’s your Name ?’ says the Justice to
 Adams, who answered, ‘ It is *Æschylus*, and I
 ‘ will maintain it.’—‘ O it is,’ says the Justice,
 ‘ make Mr. *Æschylus* his *Mittimus*. I will teach
 ‘ you to banter me with a false Name.’

One of the Company having looked stedfastly
 at Adams asked him, ‘ if he did not know La-
 ‘ dy *Booby* ?’ Upon which Adams presently
 calling him to Mind, answered in a Rapture,
 ‘ O Squire, are you there ? I believe you will

‘ inform his Worship I am innocent.’ ‘ I can
‘ indeed say,’ replied the Squire, ‘ that I am very
‘ much surprized to see you in this Situation ;’
and then addressing himself to the Justice, he
said, ‘ Sir, I assure you Mr. *Adams* is a Clergy-
‘ man as he appears, and a Gentleman of a very
‘ good Character. I wish you would enquire a
‘ little farther into this Affair ; for I am convin-
‘ ced of his Innocence.’ ‘ Nay,’ says the Ju-
stice, ‘ if he is a Gentleman, and you are sure
‘ he is innocent, I don’t desire to commit him,
‘ not I ; I will commit the Woman by herself,
‘ and take your Bail for the Gentleman ; look
‘ into the Book, Clerk, and see how it is to take
‘ Bail ; come—and make the *Mittimus* for the
‘ *Woman* as fast as you can.’ ‘ Sir,’ cries *Adams*,
‘ I assure you she is as innocent as myself.’ ‘ Per-
‘ haps,’ said the Squire, ‘ there may be some Mi-
‘ stake ; pray let us hear Mr. *Adams*’s Relation.’
‘ With all my Heart,’ answered the Justice, ‘ and
‘ give the Gentleman a Glass to whet his Whistle
‘ before he begins. I know how to behave my-
‘ self to Gentlemen as well as another. No body
‘ can say I have committed a Gentleman, since I
‘ have been in the Commission.’ *Adams* then
began the Narrative, in which, though he was
very prolix, he was uninterrupted, unless by sever-
al *Hums* and *Ha’s* of the Justice, and his Desire
to repeat those Parts which seemed to him most
material. When he had finished, the Justice,
who on what the Squire had said, believed every
Syllable of his Story on his bare Affirmation,
notwithstanding the Depositions on Oath to the
contrary, began to let loose several *Rogues* and
Rascals against the Witness, whom he ordered
to stand forth, but in vain : the said Witness,
long

long since finding what Turn Matters were like to take, had privily withdrawn, without attending the Issue. The Justice now flew into a violent Passion, and was hardly prevailed with not to commit the innocent Fellows, who had been imposed on as well as himself. He swore, 'they had best find out the Fellow who was guilty of Perjury, and bring him before him within two Days, or he would bind them all over to their good Behaviour.' They all promised to use their best Endeavours to that Purpose, and were dismissed. Then the Justice insisted, that Mr. *Adams* should sit down and take a Glass with him; and the Parson of the Parish delivered him back the Manuscript without saying a Word; nor would *Adams*, who plainly discerned his Ignorance, expose it. As for *Fanny*, she was, at her own Request, recommended to the Care of a Maid-Servant of the House, who helped her to new dress, and clean herself.

The Company in the Parlour had not been long seated, before they were alarmed with a horrible Uproar from without, where the Persons who had apprehended *Adams* and *Fanny*, had been regaling, according to the Custom of the House, with the Justice's strong Beer. These were all fallen together by the Ears, and were cuffing each other without any Mercy. The Justice himself sallied out, and with the Dignity of his Presence soon put an End to the Fray. On his Return into the Parlour, he reported, 'That the Occasion of the Quarrel, was no other than a Dispute, to whom, if *Adams* had been convicted, the greater Share of the Reward for apprehending him had belonged.' All the Company laughed at this, except *Adams*,
 I 6 who,

who, taking his Pipe from his Mouth, fetched a deep Groan, and said, he was concerned to see so litigious a Temper in Men. That he remembered a Story something like it in one of the Parishes where his Cure lay : ‘ There was,’ continued he, ‘ a Competition between three young ‘ Fellows for the Place of the Clerk, which I ‘ disposed of, to the best of my Abilities, according to Merit : that is, I gave it to him who ‘ had the happiest Knack at setting a Psalm. The ‘ Clerk was no sooner established in his Place than ‘ a Contention began between the two disappointed Candidates concerning their Excellence, each ‘ contending, on whom, had they two been the ‘ only Competitors, my Election would have fallen. This Dispute frequently disturbed the Congregation, and introduced a Discord into the ‘ Psalmody, ’till I was forced to silence them ‘ both. But alas, the litigious Spirit could not ‘ be stifled ; and being no longer able to vent itself in singing, it now broke forth in fighting. ‘ It produced many Battles, (for they were very ‘ near a Match;) and, I believe, would have ‘ ended fatally, had not the Death of the Clerk ‘ given me an Opportunity to promote one of ‘ them to his Place ; which presently put an End ‘ to the Dispute, and entirely reconciled the contending Parties.’ *Adams* then proceeded to make some philosophical Observations on the Folly of growing warm in Disputes, in which neither Party is interested. He then applied himself vigorously to smoking ; and a long Silence ensued, which was at length broke by the Justice ; who began to sing forth his own Praises, and to value himself exceedingly on his nice Discernment in the Cause which had lately been before him,

him. He was quickly interrupted by Mr. *Adams*, between whom and his Worship a Dispute now arose, whether he ought not, in Strictness of Law, to have committed him, the said *Adams*; in which the latter maintained he ought to have been committed, and the Justice as vehemently held he ought not. This had most probably produced a Quarrel, (for both were very violent and positive in their Opinions) had not *Fanny* accidentally heard, that a young Fellow was going from the Justice's House to the very Inn where the Stage-Coach, in which *Joseph* was, put up. Upon this News, she immediately sent for the Parson out of the Parlour. *Adams*, when he found her resolute to go, (tho' she would not own the Reason, but pretended she could not bear to see the Faces of those who had suspected her of such a Crime) was as fully determined to go with her; he accordingly took leave of the Justice and Company, and so ended a Dispute, in which the Law seemed shamefully to intend to set a Magistrate and a Divine together by the Ears.

C H A P. XII.

A very delightful Adventure, as well to the Persons concerned, as to the good-natured Reader.

ADAMS, *Fanny*, and the Guide, set out together, about one in the Morning, the Moon being then just risen. They had not gone above a Mile, before a most violent Storm of Rain obliged them to take Shelter in an Inn, or rather

rather Alehouse ; where *Adams* immediately procured himself a good Fire, a Toast and Ale, and a Pipe, and began to smoke with great Content, utterly forgetting every thing that had happened.

Fanny sat likewise down by the Fire ; but was much more impatient at the Storm. She presently engaged the Eyes of the Host, his Wife, the Maid of the House, and the young Fellow who was their Guide ; they all conceived they had never seen any thing half so handsome : and indeed, Reader, if thou art of an amorous Hue, I advise thee to skip over the next Paragraph ; which, to render our History perfect, we are obliged to set down, humbly hoping, that we may escape the Fate of *Pygmalion* : for if it should happen to us or to thee to be struck with this Picture, we should be perhaps in as helpless a Condition as *Narcissus* ; and might say to ourselves, *Quod petis est nusquam*. Or if the finest Features in it should set Lady ——'s Image before our Eyes, we should be still in as bad Situation, and might say to our Desires, *Cælum ipsum petimus stultitia*.

Fanny was now in the nineteenth Year of her Age ; she was tall, and delicately shaped ; but not one of those slender young Women, who seem rather intended to hang up in the Hall of an Anatomist, than for any other Purpose. On the contrary she was so plump, that she seem'd bursting through her tight Stays, especially in the Part which confined her swelling Breasts. Nor did her Hips want the Assistance of a Hoop to extend them. The exact Shape of her Arms denoted the Form of those Limbs which she concealed ; and tho' they were a little reddened by her Labour ; yet if her Sleeve slid above her Elbow, or

her

her Handkerchief discovered any Part of her Neck, a Whiteness appeared which the finest *Italian* Paint would be unable to reach. Her Hair was of a Chestnut Brown, and Nature had been extremely lavish to her of it, which she had cut, and on *Sundays* used to curl down her Neck in the modern Fashion. Her Forehead was high, her Eye-brows arched, and rather full than otherwise. Her Eyes black and sparkling; her Nose just inclining to the *Roman*; her Lips red and moist, and her under-Lip, according to the Opinion of the Ladies, too pouting. Her Teeth were white, but not exactly even. The Small-Pox had left one only Mark on her Chin, which was so large, it might have been mistaken for a Dimple, had not her left Cheek produced one so near a Neighbour to it, that the former served only for a Foil to the latter. Her Complexion was fair, a little injured by the Sun, but overspread with such a Bloom, that the finest Ladies would have exchanged all their White for it: add to these a Countenance, in which tho' she was extremely bashful, a Sensibility appeared almost incredible; and a Sweetness, whenever she smiled, beyond either Imitation or Description. To conclude all, she had a natural Gentility, superior to the Acquisition of Art, and which surprized all who beheld her.

This lovely Creature was sitting by the Fire with *Adams*, when her Attention was suddenly engaged by a Voice from an inner Room, which sung the following Song.

The

The S O N G.

*S*AY, Chloe, where must the Swain stray
Who is by thy Beauties undone,
To wash their Remembrance away,
To what distant Lethe must run ?
The Wretch who is sentenc'd to die,
May escape, and leave Justice behind;
From his Country perhaps he may fly :
But O can he fly from his Mind !

O Rapture ! unthought of before,
To be thus of Chloe possesst ;
Nor she, nor no Tyrant's hard Power,
Her Image can tear from my Breast.
But felt not Narcissus more Joy,
With his Eyes he beheld his lov'd Charms ?
Yet what ~~he~~ beheld, the fond Boy
More eagerly wish'd in his Arms.

How can it thy dear Image be,
Which fills thus my Bosom with Woe ?
Can aught bear Resemblance to thee,
Which Grief and not Joy can bestow ?
This Counterfeit snatch from my Heart,
Ye Pow'rs, tho' with Torment I rave,
Tho' mortal will prove the fell Smart,
I then shall find rest in my Grave.

Ah ! see the dear Nymph o'er the Plain
Comes smiling and tripping along,
A thousand Loves dance in her Train ;
The Graces around her all throng.

To meet her soft Zephyrus flies,
 And wafts all the Sweets from the Flow'rs;
 Ah Rogue! whilst he kisses her Eyes,
 More Sweets from her Breath he devours.

My Soul, whilst I gaze, is on fire,
 But her Looks were so tender and kind;
 My Hope almost reach'd my Desire,
 And left lame Despair far behind.
 Transported with Madness I flew,
 And eagerly seiz'd on my Bliss;
 Her Bosom but half she withdrew,
 But half she refus'd my fond Kiss.

Advances like these made me bold,
 I whisper'd her, Love,—we're alone,
 The rest let Immortals unfold,
 No Language can tell but their own.
 Ah Chloe expiring, I cry'd,
 How long I thy Cruelty bore?
 Ah! Strephon, she blushing reply'd,
 You ne'er was so pressing before.

Adams had been ruminating all this Time on a Passage in *Æschylus*, without attending in the least to the Voice, tho' one of the most melodious that ever was heard; when casting his Eyes on *Fanny*, he cried out, 'Bless us, you look extremely pale.' Pale! Mr. Adams, says she, O Jesus! and fell backwards in her Chair. Adams jumped up, flung his *Æschylus* into the Fire, and fell a roaring to the People of the House for Help. He soon summoned every one into the Room, and the Songster among the rest: But, O Reader, when this Nightingale, who was no other than *Joseph Andrews* himself, saw his beloved
 Fanny

Fanny in the Situation we have described her, canst thou conceive the Agitations of his Mind? If thou canst not, wave that Meditation to behold his Happiness, when, clasping her in his Arms, he found Life and Blood returning into her Cheeks; when he saw her open her beloved Eyes, and heard her with the softest Accent whisper, 'Are you *Joseph Andrews*?' 'Art thou my *Fanny*?' he answered eagerly, and pulling her to his Heart, he imprinted numberless Kisses on her Lips, without considering who were present.

If Prudes are offended at the Lusciousness of this Picture, they may take their Eyes off from it, and survey Parson *Adams* dancing about the Room in a Rapture of Joy. Some Philosophers may perhaps doubt, whether he was not the happiest of the three; for the Goodness of his Heart enjoyed the Blessings which were exulting in the Breasts of both the other two, together with his own. But we shall leave such Disquisitions as too deep for us, to those who are building some favourite Hypothesis, which they will refuse no metaphysical Rubbish to erect and support: for our Part, we give it clearly on the Side of *Joseph*, whose Happiness was not only greater than the Parson's, but of longer Duration: for as soon as the first Tumults of *Adams's* Rapture were over, he cast his Eyes towards the Fire, where *Æschylus* lay expiring; and immediately rescued the poor Remains, to wit, the Sheep-skin Covering of his dear Friend, which was the Work of his own Hands, and had been his inseparable Companion for upwards of thirty Years.

Fanny had no sooner perfectly recovered herself, than she began to restrain the Impetuosity
of:

of her Transports; and reflecting on what she had done and suffered in the Presence of so many, she was immediately covered with Confusion; and pushing *Joseph* gently from her, she begged him to be quiet: nor would admit of either Kifs or Embrace any longer. Then seeing Mrs. *Slipslop*, she curt'sied, and offered to advance to her; but that high Woman would not return her Curt'sies; but casting her Eyes another way, immediately withdrew into another Room, muttering as she went, she wondered *who the Creature was*.

C H A P. XIII.

A Dissertation concerning high People and low People, with Mrs. Slipslop's Departure in no very good Temper of Mind, and the evil Plight in which she left Adams and his Company.

IT will doubtless seem extremely odd to many Readers, that Mrs. *Slipslop*, who had lived several Years in the same House with *Fanny*, should in a short Separation utterly forget her. And indeed the Truth is, that she remembered her very well. As we would not willingly therefore, that any Thing should appear unnatural in this our History, we will endeavour to explain the Reasons of her Conduct; nor do we doubt being able to satisfy the most curious Reader, that Mrs. *Slipslop* did not in the least deviate from the common Road in this Behaviour; and indeed, had she done otherwise, she must have descended.

scended below herself, and would have very justly been liable to Censure.

Be it known then, that the human Species are divided into two sorts of People, to wit, *High People* and *Low People*. As by *High People* I would not be understood to mean Persons literally born higher in their Dimensions than the rest of the Species, nor metaphorically those of exalted Characters or Abilities; so by *Low People* I cannot be construed to intend the Reverse. *High People* signify no other than People of Fashion, and *low People* those of no Fashion. Now this Word *Fashion* hath by long Use lost its original Meaning, from which at present it gives us a very different Idea: for I am deceived, if by Persons of Fashion, we do not generally include a Conception of Birth and Accomplishments superior to the Herd of Mankind; whereas in reality, nothing more was originally meant by a Person of Fashion, than a Person who dress himself in the Fashion of the Times; and the Word really and truly signifies no more at this Day. Now the World being thus divided into People of Fashion, and People of no Fashion, a fierce Contention arose between them; nor would those of one Party, to avoid Suspicion, be seen publicly to speak to those of the other, tho' they often held a very good Correspondence in private. In this Contention, it is difficult to say which Party succeeded: for whilst the People of Fashion seized several Places to their own Use, such as Courts, Assemblies, Operas, Balls, &c. the People of no Fashion, besides one Royal Place, called his Majesty's Bear-Garden, have been in constant Possession of all Hops, Fairs, Revels, &c. Two Places have been agreed to be divided between them,

them, namely the Church and the Play-house ; where they segregate themselves from each other in a remarkable Manner : for as the People of Fashion exalt themselves at Church over the Heads of the People of no Fashion ; so in the Play-house they abase themselves in the same Degree under their Feet. This Distinction I have never met with any one able to account for : It is sufficient, that so far from looking on each other as Brethren in the Christian Language, they seem scarce to regard each other as of the same Species. This the Terms *strange Persons*, *People one does not know*, *the Creature*, *Wretches*, *Beasts*, *Brutes*, and many other Appellations evidently demonstrate ; which Mrs. *Slipshod* having often heard her Mistress use, thought she had also a Right to use in her Turn : and perhaps she was not mistaken ; for these two Parties, especially those bordering nearly on each other, to wit, the lowest of the High, and the highest of the Low, often change their Parties according to Place and Time ; for those who are People of Fashion in one Place, are often People of no Fashion in another. And with regard to Time, it may not be unpleasant to survey the Picture of Dependance like a kind of Ladder : as for instance ; early in the Morning arises the Possillion, or some other Boy, which great Families, no more than great Ships, are without, and falls to brushing the Clothes, and cleaning the Shoes of *John* the Footman, who being dressed himself, applies his Hands to the same Labours for Mr. *Second-hand* the Squire's Gentleman ; the Gentleman in the like manner, a little later in the Day, attends the Squire ; the Squire is no sooner equipped, than he attends the Levee of
my

my Lord; which is no sooner over, than my Lord himself is seen at the Levee of the Favourite, who, after the Hour of Homage is at an End, appears himself to pay Homage to the Levee of his Sovereign. Nor is there, perhaps, in this whole Ladder of Dependance, any one Step at a greater Distance from the other, than the first from the second: so that to a Philosopher the Question might only seem, whether you would chuse to be a great Man at six in the Morning, or at two in the Afternoon. And yet there are scarce two of these, who do not think the least Familiarity with the Persons below them a Condescension, and if they were to go one Step farther, a Degradation.

And now, Reader, I hope thou wilt pardon this long Digression, which seemed to me necessary to vindicate the great Character of Mrs. *Slipslop*, from what low People, who have never seen high People, might think an Absurdity: but we who know them, must have daily found very high Persons know us in one Place and not in another, To-day, and not To-morrow; all which it is difficult to account for, otherwise than I have here endeavoured; and perhaps, if the Gods, according to the Opinion of some, made Men only to laugh at them; there is no Part of our Behaviour which answers the End of our Creation better than this.

But to return to our History: *Adams*, who knew no more of this than the Cat which sat on the Table, imagining Mrs. *Slipslop*'s Memory had been much worse than it really was, followed her into the next Room, crying out, 'Madam *Slipslop*, here is one of your old Acquaintance: Do but see what a fine Woman
' she

Ch. 13. JOSEPH ANDREWS, &c. 191

‘ she is grown since she left Lady Booby’s Service.’ ‘ I think I *reflect* something of her,’ answered she with great Dignity, ‘ but I can’t remember all the inferior Servants in our Family.’ She then proceeded to satisfy *Adams’s* Curiosity, by telling him, ‘ when she arrived at the Inn, she found a Chaise ready for her ; that her Lady being expected very shortly in the Country, she was obliged to make the utmost Haste, and in *Commensuration* of *Joseph’s* Lameness, she had taken him with her ;’ and lastly, ‘ that the excessive *Virulence* of the Storm had driven them into the House where he found them.’ After which, she acquainted *Adams* with his having left his Horse, and expressed some Wonder at his having strayed so far out of his Way, and at meeting him, as she said, ‘ in the Company of that Wench, who she feared was no better than she should be.’

The Horse was no sooner put into *Adams’s* Head, but he was immediately driven out by this Reflection on the Character of *Fanny*. He protested, ‘ he believed there was not a chaster Damself in the Universe. I heartily wish, I heartily wish,’ cry’d he, (snapping his Fingers) ‘ that all her Betters were as good.’ He then proceeded to inform her of the Accident of their Meeting ; but when he came to mention the Circumstance of delivering her from the Rape, she said, ‘ she thought him properer for the Army than the Clergy : that it did not become a Clergyman to lay violent Hands on any one ; that he should have rather prayed that she might be strengthened.’ *Adams* said, ‘ he was very far from being ashamed of what he had done ;’ she replied, ‘ want of Shame was not
‘ the

‘ the *Currycurist* of a Clergyman.’ This Dialogue might have probably grown warmer, had not *Joseph* opportunely entered the Room, to ask leave of *Madam Slipslop* to introduce *Fanny*: but she positively refused to admit any such Trollops; and told him, ‘ she would have been burnt, before she would have suffered him to get into a Chaise with her, if she had once respected him of having his Sluts way-laid on the Road for him; adding, ‘ that Mr. *Adams* acted a very pretty Part, and she did not doubt but to see him a Bishop.’ He made the best Bow he could, and cried out, ‘ I thank you, Madam, for that Right Reverend Appellation, which I shall take all honest Means to deserve.’ ‘ Very honest Means,’ returned she with a Sneer, ‘ to bring good People together.’ At these Words *Adams* took two or three Strides a-cross the Room, when the Coachman came to inform Mrs. *Slipslop*, ‘ that the Storm was over, and the Moon shone very bright.’ She then sent for *Joseph*, who was sitting without with his *Fanny*, and would have had him gone with her: but he peremptorily refused to leave *Fanny* behind; which threw the good Woman into a violent Rage. She said, ‘ she would inform her Lady what Doings were carrying on, and did not doubt but she would rid the Parish of all such People;’ and concluded a long Speech full of Bitterness and very hard Words, with some Reflections on the Clergy, not decent to repeat: at last finding *Joseph* unmoveable, she flung herself into the Chaise, casting a Look at *Fanny* as she went, not unlike that which *Cleopatra* gives *Octavia* in the Play. To say the truth, she was most disagreeably disappointed by the Presence of *Fanny*;

ny; she had, from her first seeing *Joseph* at the Inn, conceived Hopes of something which might have been accomplished at an Alehouse as well as a Palace. Indeed it is probable Mr. *Adams* had rescued more than *Fanny* from the Danger of a Rape that Evening.

When the Chaise had carried off the enraged *Slipshod*; *Adams*, *Joseph* and *Fanny* assembled over the Fire; where they had a great deal of innocent Chat, pretty enough; but as possibly it would not be very entertaining to the Reader, we shall hasten to the Morning; only observing that none of them went to bed that Night. *Adams*, when he had smoaked three Pipes, took a comfortable Nap in a great Chair, and left the Lovers, whose Eyes were too well employed to permit any Desire of shutting them, to enjoy by themselves, during some Hours, an Happiness which none of my Readers, who have never been in love, are capable of the least Conception of, tho' we had as many Tongues as *Homer* desired, to describe it with, and which all true Lovers will represent to their own Minds without the least Assistance from us.

Let it suffice then to say, that *Fanny*, after a thousand Entreaties, at last gave up her whole Soul to *Joseph*, and almost fainting in his Arms, with a Sigh infinitely softer and sweeter too than any *Arabian Breeze*, she whispered to his Lips, which were then close to hers, 'O *Joseph*, you have won me; I will be yours for ever.' *Joseph*, having thanked her on his Knees, and embraced her with an Eagerness, which she now almost returned, leapt up in a Rapture, and awakened the Parson, earnestly begging him, 'that he would that Instant join their Hands together.'

Adams rebuked him for his Request, and told him, ' he would by no means consent to any ' thing contrary to the Forms of the Church; ' that he had no Licence, nor indeed would he ' advise him to obtain one. That the Church ' had prescribed a Form, namely the Publication ' of Banns, with which all good Christians ought ' to comply, and to the Omission of which he ' attributed the many Miseries which befel great ' Folks in Marriage; concluding, *As many as are ' joined together otherwise than G—'s Word doth ' allow, are not joined together by G—, neither is ' their Matrimony lawful.*' *Fanny* agreed with the Parson, saying to *Joseph* with a Blush, ' she ' assured him she would not consent to any such ' thing, and that she wondered at his offering it.' In which Resolution she was comforted, and commended by *Adams*; and *Joseph* was obliged to wait patiently till after the third Publication of the Banns, which however he obtained the Consent of *Fanny*, in the Presence of *Adams*, to put in at their Arrival.

The Sun had been now risen some Hours, when *Joseph*, finding his Leg surprisingly recovered, proposed to walk forwards; but when they were all ready to set out, an Accident a little retarded them. This was no other than the Reckoning, which amounted to seven Shillings; no great Sum, if we consider the immense Quantity of Ale which Mr. *Adams* poured in. Indeed they had no Objection to the Reasonableness of the Bill, but many to the Probability of paying it; for the Fellow who had taken poor *Fanny's* Purse, had unluckily forgot to return it. So that the Account stood thus:

Mr.

Mr. <i>Adams</i> and Company Dr.	o	7	o
In Mr. <i>Adam's</i> Pocket, ———	o	o	6½
In Mr. <i>Joseph's</i> , — — —	o	o	o
In Mrs. <i>Fanny's</i> , — — —	o	o	o
Balance, — — — — —	o	6	5½

They stood silent some few Minutes, staring at each other, when *Adams* whipt out on his Toes, and asked the Hostess 'if there was no Clergyman 'in that Parish?' She answered, 'there was.' 'Is he wealthy?' replied he; to which she likewise answered in the Affirmative. *Adams* then snapping his Fingers returned overjoyed to his Companions, crying out, '*Heureka, Heureka*;' which not being understood, he told them in plain *English*, 'they need give themselves no trouble; 'for he had a Brother in the Parish, who would 'defray the Reckoning, and that he would just 'step to his House and fetch the Money, and re- 'turn to them instantly.'

C H A P. XIV.

An Interview between Parson Adams and Parson Trulliber.

PARSON *Adams* came to the House of Parson *Trulliber*, whom he found stript into his Waistcoat, with an Apron on, and a Pail in his Hand, just come from serving his Hogs; for Mr. *Trulliber* was a Parson on *Sundays*, but all the other six might more properly be called a Farmer. He occupied a small Piece of Land of his own, besides which he rented a considerable deal

more. His Wife milked his Cows, managed his Dairy, and followed the Markets with Butter and Eggs. The Hogs fell chiefly to his Care, which he carefully waited on at home, and attended to Fairs; on which occasion he was liable to many Jokes, his own Size being with much Ale rendered little inferior to that of the Beasts he sold. He was indeed one of the largest Men you should see, and could have acted the Part of Sir *John Falstaff* without stuffing. Add to this, that the Rotundity of his Belly was considerably increased by the Shortness of his Stature, his Shadow ascending very near as far in height when he lay on his Back, as when he stood on his Legs. His Voice was loud and hoarse, and his Accents extremely broad; to complete the whole, he had a Stateliness in his Gait, when he walked, not unlike that of a Goose, only he stalked slower.

Mr. *Trulliber* being informed that somebody wanted to speak with him, immediately slipped off his Apron, and clothed himself in an old Night-Gown, being the Dress in which he always saw his Company at home. His Wife, who informed him of Mr. *Adams's* Arrival, had made a small Mistake; for she had told her Husband, 'she believed here was a Man come for some of his Hogs.' This Supposition made Mr. *Trulliber* hasten with the utmost Expedition to attend his Guest. He no sooner saw *Adams*, than not in the least doubting the Cause of his Errand to be what his Wife had imagined, he told him, 'he was come in very good time; that he expected a Dealer that very Afternoon;' and added, 'they were all pure and fat, and upwards of 20 Score a-piece.' *Adams* answered, 'he believed he did not know him.' 'Yes, yes,' cried

cried *Trulliber*, 'I have seen you often at *Fair*; why, we have dealt before now mun, I warrant you; yes, yes, cries he, I remember thy Face very well, but won't mention a Word more till you have seen them, tho' I have never sold thee a Flitch of such Bacon as is now in the Sty.' Upon which he laid violent Hands on *Adams*, and dragged him into the Hogs-Stye, which was indeed but two Steps from his Parlour Window. They were no sooner arrived there than he cry'd out, 'Do but handle them; step in, Friend, art welcome to handle them whether dost buy or no.' At which Words opening the Gate, he pushed *Adams* into the Pig-Stye, insisting on it, that he should handle them, before he would talk one Word with him. *Adams*, whose natural Complacence was beyond any artificial, was obliged to comply before he was suffered to explain himself; and laying hold on one of their Tails, the unruly Beast gave such a sudden Spring, that he threw poor *Adams* all along in the Mire. *Trulliber*, instead of assisting him to get up, burst into a Laughter, and entering the Sty, said to *Adams* with some Contempt, *Why, dost not know how to handle a Hog?* and was going to lay hold of one himself; but *Adams*, who thought he had carried his Complacence far enough, was no sooner on his Legs, than he escaped out of the Reach of the Animals, and cried out, *Nihil habeo cum Porcis*: 'I am a Clergyman, Sir, and am not come to buy Hogs.' *Trulliber* answered, 'he was sorry for the Mistake; but that he must blame his Wife;' adding, 'she was a Fool, and always committed Blunders.' He then desired him to walk in and clean himself;

that he would only fasten up the Stye and follow him. *Adams* desired leave to dry his great Coat, Wig and Hat by the Fire, which *Trulliber* granted. Mrs. *Trulliber* would have brought him a Bason of Water to wash his Face; but her Husband bid her be quiet like a Fool as she was, or she would commit more Blunders, and then directed *Adams* to the Pump. While *Adams* was thus employed, *Trulliber* conceiving no great Respect for the Appearance of his Guest, fastened the Parleur-Door, and now conducted him into the Kitchen; telling him, he believed a Cup of Drink would do him no Harm, and whispered his Wife to draw a little of the worst Ale. After a short Silence, *Adams* said, 'I fancy, Sir, you already perceive me to be a Clergyman.' 'Ay, ay,' cries *Trulliber* grinning; 'I perceive you have some Cassock; I will not venture to caale it a whole one.' *Adams* answered, 'it was indeed none of the best; but he had the Misfortune to tear it about ten Years ago in passing over a Stile.' Mrs. *Trulliber* returning with the Drink, told her Husband, 'she fancied the Gentleman was a Traveller, and that he would be glad to eat a Bit.' *Trulliber* bid her hold her impertinent Tongue; and asked her if Parsons used to travel without Horses?' adding, 'he supposed the Gentleman had none by his having no Boots on.' Yes, Sir, yes,' says *Adams*, 'I have a Horse, but I have left him behind me.' 'I am glad to hear you have one,' says *Trulliber*; 'for I assure you, I don't love to see Clergymen on Foot; it is not seemly nor suiting the Dignity of the Cloth.' Here *Trulliber* made a long Oration on the Dignity of the Cloth (or rather Gown) not much worth relating,



J. Hulott inv. et sculp. Published March 1st 1742, by A. Millar.



lating, till his Wife had spread the Table and set a Mefs of Porridge on it for his Breakfast. He then said to *Adams*, ‘I don’t know, Friend, how you came to *caale* on me; however, as you are here, if you think proper to eat a Morsel, you may.’ *Adams* accepted the Invitation, and the two Parsons sat down together, Mrs. *Trulliber* waiting behind her Husband’s Chair, as was, it seems, her Custom. *Trulliber* eat heartily, but scarce put any Thing in his Mouth without finding Fault with his Wife’s Cookery. All which the poor Woman bore patiently. Indeed she was so absolute an Admirer of her Husband’s Greatness and Importance, of which she had frequent Hints from his own Mouth, that she almost carried her Adoration to an Opinion of his Infallibility. To say the Truth, the Parson had exercised her more Ways than one; and the pious Woman had so well edified by her Husband’s Sermons, that she had resolved to receive the bad Things of this World together with the good. She had indeed been at first a little contentious; but he had long since got the better, partly by her love for *this*, partly by her fear of *that*, partly by her Religion, partly by the Respect he paid himself, and partly by that which he received from the Parish: She had, in short, absolutely submitted, and now worshipped her Husband as *Sarah* did *Abraham*, calling him (not Lord but) Master. Whilst they were at Table, her Husband gave her a fresh Example of his Greatness; for as she had just delivered a Cup of Ale to *Adams*, he snatched it out of his Hand, and crying out, *I caal’d vurst*, swallowed down the Ale. *Adams* denied it; it was referred to the Wife, who, tho’ her Conscience was

on the Side of *Adams*, durst not give it against her Husband. Upon which he said, ‘No, Sir, no, I should not have been so rude to have taken it from you, if you had *caal’d vurst*; but I’d have you know I’m a better Man than to suffer the best He in the Kingdom to drink before me in my own House, when I *caale vurst*.’

As soon as their Breakfast was ended, *Adams* began in the following Manner: I think, Sir, it is high time to inform you of the Business of my Embassy. I am a Traveller, and am passing this Way in Company with two young People, a Lad and a Damsel, my Parishioners, towards to my own Cure: we stopt at a House of Hospitality in the Parish, where they directed me to you, as having the Cure.— ‘Tho’ I am but a Curate,’ says *Trulliber*, ‘I believe I am as warm as the Vicar himself, or perhaps the Rector of the next Parish too; I believe I could buy them both.’ ‘Sir,’ cries *Adams*, ‘I rejoice thereat. Now, Sir, my Business is, that we are by various Accidents stript of our Money, and are not able to pay our Reckoning, being seven Shillings. I therefore request you to assist me with the Loan of those seven Shillings, and also seven Shillings more, which peradventure I shall return to you; but if not, I am convinced you will joyfully embrace such an Opportunity of laying up a Treasure in a better Place than any this World affords.’

Suppose a Stranger, who entered the Chambers of a Lawyer, being imagined a Client, when the Lawyer was preparing his Palm for the Fee, should pull out a Writ against him. Suppose an Apothecary, at the Door of a Chariot containing some
great

great Doctor of eminent Skill, should, instead of Directions to a Patient, present him with a Position for himself. Suppose a Minister should, instead of a good round Sum, treat my Lord——or Sir——or Esq;——with a good Broomstick. Suppose a civil Companion, or a led Captain should, instead of Virtue, and Honour, and Beauty, and Parts, and Admiration, thunder Vice and Infamy, and Ugliness, and Folly, and Contempt, in his Patron's Ears. Suppose when a Tradesman first carries in his Bill the Man of Fashion should pay it; or suppose, if he did so, the Tradesman should abate what he had overcharged on the Supposition of waiting. In short, —suppose what you will, you never can, nor will suppose any thing equal to the Astonishment which seized on *Trulliber*, as soon as *Adams* had ended his Speech. A while he rolled his Eyes in Silence, sometimes surveying *Adams*, then his Wife, then casting them on the Ground, then lifting them to Heaven. At last, he burst forth in the following Accents. ‘Sir, I believe I know
‘ where to lay up my little Treasure as well as
‘ another; I thank G— if I am not so warm as
‘ some, I am content; that is a Blessing greater
‘ than Riches; and he to whom that is given
‘ need ask no more. To be content with a lit-
‘ tle is greater than to possess the World, which
‘ a Man may possess without being so. Lay up
‘ my Treasure! what matters where a Man's
‘ Treasure is, whose Heart is in the Scriptures?
‘ there is the Treasure of a Christian.’ At these Words the Water ran from *Adams's* Eyes; and catching *Trulliber* by the Hand in a Rapture,
‘ Brother,’ says he, ‘Heavens bless the Accident
‘ by which I came to see you; I would have

‘walked many a Mile to have communed with you, and, believe me, I will shortly pay you a second Visit: but my Friends, I fancy, by this time, wonder at my stay; so let me have the Money immediately.’ *Trulliber* then put on a stern Look, and cried out, ‘Thou dost not intend to rob me?’ At which the Wife, bursting into Tears, fell on her Knees, and roared out, ‘O dear Sir, for Heaven’s sake don’t rob my Master, we are but poor People.’ ‘Get up for a Fool as thou art, and go about thy Business,’ said *Trulliber*, ‘dost think the Man will venture his Life? he is a Beggar, and no Robber.’ ‘Very true indeed,’ answered *Adams*. ‘I wish, with all my Heart, the Tithing-Man was here,’ cries *Trulliber*, ‘I would have thee punished as a Vagabond for thy Impudence. Fourteen Shillings indeed! I won’t give thee a Farthing. I believe thou art no more a Clergyman than the Woman there, (pointing to his Wife) but if thou art, dost deserve to have thy Gown stript over thy Shoulders, for running about the Country in such a manner.’ ‘I forgive your Suspicions,’ says *Adams*; ‘but suppose I am not a Clergyman, I am nevertheless thy Brother; and thou, as a Christian, much more as a Clergyman, art obliged to relieve my Distress.’ ‘Dost preach to me?’ replied *Trulliber*, ‘dost pretend to instruct me in my Duty?’ ‘Ifacks, a good Story,’ cries Mrs. *Trulliber*, ‘to preach to my Master.’ ‘Silence, Woman,’ cries *Trulliber*, ‘I would have thee know, Friend,’ (addressing himself to *Adams*) ‘I shall not learn my Duty from such as thee; I know what Charity is, better than to give to Vagabonds. Besides, if we were inclined, the Poors Rate

‘Rate obliges us to give so much Charity,’ cries the Wife.—‘Pugh! thou art a Fool. Poors Reate! hold thy Nonsense,’ answered *Trulliber*: and then, turning to *Adams*, he told him, ‘he would give him nothing.’ I am sorry,’ answered *Adams*, ‘that you do know what Charity is, since you practise it no better; I must tell you, if you trust to your Knowledge for your Justification, you will find yourself deceived, though you should add Faith to it without good Works.’ ‘Fellow’ cries *Trulliber*, ‘Dost thou speak against Faith in my House? Get out of my Doors, I will no longer remain under the same Roof with a Wretch who speaks wantonly of Faith and the Scriptures.’ ‘Name not the Scriptures,’ says *Adams*. ‘How, not name the Scriptures! Do you disbelieve the Scriptures?’ cries *Trulliber*. ‘No, but you do,’ answered *Adams*, ‘if I may reason from your Practice: for their Commands are so explicate, and their Rewards and Punishments so immense, that it is impossible a Man should steadfastly believe without obeying. Now, there is no Command more express, no Duty more frequently enjoined, than Charity. Whoever therefore is void of Charity, I make no scruple of pronouncing that he is no Christian.’ ‘I would not advise thee,’ (says *Trulliber*) ‘to say that I am no Christian; I won’t take it of you: for I believe I am as good a Man as thyself;’ (and indeed, though he was now rather too corpulent for athletic Exercises, he had in his Youth been one of the best Boxers and Cudgel-players in the County.) His Wife, seeing him clench his Fist, interposed, and begged him not to fight, but shew himself a true Christian,

stian, and take the Law of him. As nothing could provoke *Adams* to strike, but an absolute Assault on himself or his Friend, he smiled at the angry Look and Gestures of *Trulliber*; and telling him, he was sorry to see such Men in Orders, departed without further Ceremony.

CHAP. XV.

An Adventure, the Consequence of a new Instance which Parson Adams gave of his Forgetfulness.

WHEN he came back to the Inn, he found *Joseph* and *Fanny* sitting together. They were so far from thinking his Absence long, as he had feared they would, that they never once miss'd or thought of him. Indeed I have been often assured by both, that they spent these Hours in a most delightful Conversation: But as I never could prevail on either to relate it; so I cannot communicate it to the Reader.

Adams acquainted the Lovers with the ill Success of his Enterprize. They were all greatly confounded, none being able to propose any Method of departing, till *Joseph* at last advised calling in the Hostess, and desiring her to trust them; which *Fanny* said she despaired of her doing, as she was one of the fourest-fac'd Women she had ever beheld.

But she was agreeably disappointed; for the Hostess was no sooner asked the Question than she readily agreed; and with a Curt'sy and Smile, wished them a good Journey. However, lest *Fanny's* Skill in Physiognomy should be called in question,

question, we will venture to assign one Reason, which might probably incline her to this Confidence and Good-humour. When *Adams* said he was going to visit his Brother, he had unwittingly imposed on *Joseph* and *Fanny*; who both believed he had meant his natural Brother, and not his Brother in Divinity; and had so informed the Hostess on her Enquiry after him. Now Mr. *Trulliber* had by his Professions of Piety, by his Gravity, Austerity, Reserve, and the Opinion of his great Wealth, so great an Authority in his Parish, that they all lived in the utmost Fear and Apprehension of him. It was therefore no Wonder that the Hostess, who knew it was in his Option whether she should ever sell another Mug of Drink, did not dare to affront his supposed Brother by denying him Credit.

They were now just on their Departure, when *Adams* recollected he had left his Great Coat and Hat at Mr. *Trulliber's*. As he was not desirous of renewing his Visit, the Hostess herself, having no Servant at home, offered to fetch it.

This was an unfortunate Expedient: for the Hostess was soon undeceived in the Opinion she had entertained of *Adams*, whom *Trulliber* abused in the grossest Terms, especially when he heard he had had the Assurance to pretend to be his near Relation.

At her Return therefore, she entirely changed her Note. She said, ' Folks might be ashamed
' of travelling about, and pretending to be what
' they were not. That Taxes were high, and
' for her Part, she was obliged to pay for what
' she had; she could not therefore possibly, nor
' would she trust any body, no not her own
' Father. That Money was never scarcer, and
' she

‘ she wanted to make up a Sum. That she expected therefore they should pay their Reckoning before they left the House.’

Adams was now greatly perplexed : but as he knew that he could easily have borrowed such a Sum in his own Parish, and as he knew he would have lent it himself to any Mortal in Distress ; so he took fresh Courage, and sallied out all round the Parish, but to no Purpose ; he returned as penniless as he went, groaning and lamenting, that it was possible, in a Country professing Christianity, for a Wretch to starve in the midst of his Fellow-Creatures who abounded.

Whilst he was gone, the Hostess who stayed as a sort of Guard with *Joseph* and *Fanny*, entertained them with the Goodness of Parson *Trulliber*. And indeed he had not only a very good Character, as to other Qualities, in the Neighbourhood, but was reputed a Man of great Charity : for tho’ he never gave a Farthing, he had always that Word in his Mouth.

Adams was no sooner returned the second time, than the Storm grew exceeding high, the Hostess declaring among other Things, that if they offered to stir without paying her, she would soon overtake them with a Warrant.

Plato and *Aristotle*, or somebody else hath said, THAT WHEN THE MOST EXQUISITE CUNNING FAILS, CHANCE OFTEN HITS THE MARK, AND THAT BY MEANS THE LEAST EXPECTED. *Virgil* expresses this very boldly :

*Turne, quid optanti Divum promittere nemo
Auderet, volvenda Dies, en ! attulit ultro.*

I would

I would quote more great Men if I could: but my Memory not permitting me, I will proceed to exemplify these Observations by the following Instance.

There chanced (for *Adams* had not Cunning enough to contrive it) to be at that time in the Alehouse, a Fellow, who had been formerly a Drummer in an *Irish* Regiment, and now travelled the Country as a Pedlar. This Man having attentively listened to the Discourse of the Hostess, at last took *Adams* aside, and asked him what the Sum was for which they were detained. As soon as he was informed, he sighed, and said, 'he was sorry it was so much: for that he had 'no more than six Shillings and Sixpence in his 'Pocket, which he would lend them with all his 'heart.' *Adams* gave a Caper, and cry'd out, 'It would do: for that he had Sixpence himself.' And thus these poor People, who could not engage the Compassion of Riches and Piety, were at length delivered out of their Distress by the Charity of a poor Pedlar.

I shall refer it to my Reader to make what Observations he pleases on this Incident: it is sufficient for me to inform him, that after *Adams* and his Companions had returned him a thousand Thanks, and told him where he might call to be repaid, they all sallied out of the House without any Compliments from their Hostess, or indeed without paying her any; *Adams* declaring, he would take particular Care never to call there again, and she on her side assuring them she wanted no such Guests.

C H A P. XVI.

A very curious Adventure, in which Mr. Adams gave a much greater Instance of the honest Simplicity of his Heart than of his Experience in the Ways of this World.

OUR Travellers had walked about two Miles from that Inn, which they had more Reason to have mistaken for a Castle, than Don *Quixote* ever had any of those in which he sojourned ; seeing they had met with such Difficulty in escaping out of its Walls ; when they came to a Parish, and beheld a Sign of Invitation hanging out. A Gentleman sat smoaking a Pipe at the Door ; of whom *Adams* enquired the Road, and received so courteous and obliging an Answer, accompanied with so smiling a Countenance, that the good Parson, whose Heart was naturally disposed to Love and Affection, began to ask several other Questions ; particularly the Name of the Parish, and who was the Owner of a large House whose Front they then had in prospect. The Gentleman answered as obligingly as before ; and as to the House, acquainted him it was his own. He then proceeded in the following manner : ‘ Sir, I presume by
‘ your Habit you are a Clergyman : and as you
‘ are travelling on Foot, I suppose a Glas of good
‘ Beer will not be disagreeable to you ; and I can
‘ recommend my Landlord’s within, as some of
‘ the best in all this County. What say you, will
‘ you halt a little and let us take a Pipe together ?
‘ there is no better Tobacco in the Kingdom.’ This Proposal was not displeasing to *Adams*, who had allayed his Thirst that Day with no better Li-
quor

quor than what Mrs. *Trulliber's* Cellar had produced ; and which was indeed little superior either in Richness or Flavour to that which distilled from those Grains her generous Husband bestowed on his Hogs. Having therefore abundantly thanked the Gentleman for his kind Invitation, and bid *Joseph* and *Fanny* follow him, he entered the Ale-house, where a large Loaf and Cheese, and a Pitcher of Beer, which truly answered the Character given of it, being set before them, the three Travellers fell to eating with Appetites infinitely more voracious than are to be found at the most exquisite Eating-Houses in the Parish of St. *James's*.

The Gentleman expressed great Delight in the hearty and chearful Behaviour of *Adams* ; and particularly in the Familiarity with which he conversed with *Joseph* and *Fanny*, whom he often called his Children, a Term he explained to mean no more than his Parishioners ; saying, he looked on all those whom God had entrusted to his Cure, to stand to him in that Relation. The Gentleman, shaking him by the Hand, highly applauded those Sentiments. ‘ They are indeed,’ says he, ‘ the true Principles of a Christian Divine ; and I ‘ heartily wish they were universal : but on the ‘ contrary, I am sorry to say the Parson of our ‘ Parish, instead of esteeming his poor Parishioners ‘ as a Part of his Family, seems rather to consider ‘ them as not of the same Species with himself. ‘ He seldom speaks to any, unless some few of the ‘ richest of us ; nay, indeed he will not move his ‘ Hat to the others. I often laugh, when I behold ‘ him on *Sundays* strutting along the Church-Yard ‘ like a Turkey-Cock, through Rows of his Pa- ‘ rishioners ; who bow to him with as much Sub- ‘ mission, and are as unregarded as a Set of ser-
‘ vile

‘ vile Courtiers by the proudest Prince in *Christendom*. But if such temporal Pride is ridiculous, surely the spiritual is odious and detestable : if such a puffed-up empty human Bladder, strutting in princely Robes, just moves one’s Derision ; surely in the Habit of a Priest it must raise our Scorn.’

‘ Doubtless,’ answer’d *Adams*, ‘ your Opinion is right ; but I hope such Examples are rare. The Clergy whom I have the Honour to know, maintain a different Behaviour ; and you will allow me, Sir, that the Readiness which too many of the Laity shew to condemn the Order, may be on Reason of their avoiding too much Humility.’ ‘ Very true, indeed,’ says the Gentleman ; ‘ I find, Sir, you are a Man of excellent Sense, and am happy in this Opportunity of knowing you : perhaps our accidental Meeting may not be disadvantageous to you neither. At present, I shall only say to you, that the Incumbent of this Living is old and infirm ; and that it is in my Gift. Doctor, give me your Hand ; and assure yourself of it at his Decease.’ *Adams* told him, ‘ he was never more confounded in his Life, than at his utter Incapacity to make any Return to such noble and unmerited Generosity.’ ‘ A mere Trifle, Sir,’ cries the Gentleman, ‘ scarce worth your Acceptance ; a little more than three hundred a Year. I wish it was double the Value for your Sake.’ *Adams* bowed, and cried from the Emotions of his Gratitude ; when the other asked him, ‘ if he was married, or had any Children, besides those in the spiritual Sense he had mentioned.’ ‘ Sir,’ replied the Parson, ‘ I have a Wife and
‘ fix

‘fix at your Service.’ ‘That is unlucky,’ says the Gentleman; ‘for I would otherwise have taken you into my own House as my Chaplain; however, I have another in the Parish, (for the Parsonage-House is not good enough) which I will furnish for you. Pray does your Wife understand a Dairy?’ ‘I can’t profess she does,’ says *Adams*. ‘I am sorry for it,’ quoth the Gentleman; ‘I would have given you half a dozen Cows, and very good Grounds to have maintained them.’ ‘Sir,’ said *Adams*, in an Ecstasy, ‘you are too liberal; indeed you are.’ ‘Not at all,’ cries the Gentleman, ‘I esteem Riches only as they give me an Opportunity of doing good; and I never saw one whom I had a greater Inclination to serve.’ At which Words he shook him heartily by the Hand, and told him he had sufficient Room in his House to entertain him and his Friends. *Adams* begged he might give him no such Trouble; that they could be very well accommodated in the House where they were; forgetting they had not a Sixpenny Piece among them. The Gentleman would not be denied; and informing himself how far they were travelling, he said it was too long a Journey to take on Foot, and begged that they would favour him, by suffering him to lend them a Servant and Horses; adding withal, that if they would do him the Pleasure of their Company only two Days, he would furnish them with his Coach and Six. *Adams* turning to *Joseph*, said, ‘How lucky is this Gentleman’s Goodness to you, who I am afraid would be scarce able to hold out on your lame Leg;’ and then addressing the Person who made him these liberal Promises, after much bowing, he cried out, ‘Blessed be the
‘Hour

‘ Hour which first introduced me to a Man of
‘ your Charity: you are indeed a Christian of
‘ the true primitive kind, and an Honour to the
‘ Country wherein you live. I would willingly
‘ have taken a Pilgrimage to the Holy Land to
‘ have beheld you: For the Advantages which
‘ we draw from your Goodness, give me little
‘ Pleasure, in comparison of what I enjoy for
‘ your own Sake; when I consider the Treas-
‘ ures you are by these Means laying up for your
‘ self in a Country that passeth not away. We
‘ will therefore, most generous Sir, accept your
‘ Goodness, as well the Entertainment you have
‘ so kindly offered us at your House this Even-
‘ ing, as the Accommodation of your Horses
‘ To-morrow Morning.’ He then began to search
for his Hat, as did *Joseph* for his; and both they
and *Fanny* were in Order of Departure, when
the Gentleman stopping short, and seeming to
meditate by himself for the Space of about a Mi-
nute, exclaimed thus: ‘ Sure never any thing
‘ was so unlucky; I had forgot that my House-
‘ keeper was gone abroad, and hath locked up
‘ all my Rooms; indeed I would break them
‘ open for you, but shall not be able to fur-
‘ nish you with a Bed; for she has likewise put
‘ away all my Linnen. I am glad it entered
‘ into my Head, before I had given you the
‘ Trouble of walking there; besides, I believe
‘ you will find better Accommodations here than
‘ you expected. Landlord, you can provide good
‘ Beds for these People, can’t you?’ ‘ Yes and
‘ please your Worship,’ cries the Host, ‘ and
‘ such as no Lord or Justice of the Peace in the
‘ Kingdom need be ashamed to lie in.’ ‘ I am
‘ heartily sorry,’ says the Gentleman, ‘ for this
‘ Disap-

‘Disappointment. I am resolved I will never suffer her to carry away the Keys again.’ ‘Pray, Sir, let it not make you uneasy,’ cries *Adams*, ‘we shall do very well here; and the Loan of your Horses is a Favour we shall be incapable of making any Return to.’ ‘Ay!’ said the Squire, ‘the Horses shall attend you here, at what Hour in the Morning you please.’ And now after many Civilities too tedious to enumerate, many Squeezes by the Hand, with most affectionate Looks and Smiles at each other, and after appointing the Horses at seven the next Morning, the Gentleman took his Leave of them, and departed to his own House. *Adams* and his Companions returned to the Table, where the Parson smoaked another Pipe, and then they all retired to Rest.

Mr. *Adams* rose very early, and called *Joseph* out of his Bed, between whom a very fierce Dispute ensued, whether *Fanny* should ride behind *Joseph*, or behind the Gentleman’s Servant; *Joseph* insisting on it, that he was perfectly recovered, and was as capable of taking Care of *Fanny* as any other Person could be. But *Adams* would not agree to it, and declared he would not trust her behind him; for that he was weaker than he imagined himself to be.

This Dispute continued a long time, and had begun to be very hot, when a Servant arrived from their good Friend, to acquaint them, that he was unfortunately prevented from lending them any Horses; for that his Groom had, unknown to him, put his whole Stable under a Course of Physick.

This Advice presently struck the two Disputants dumb; *Adams* cried out, ‘Was ever any
‘ Thing

‘ Thing so unlucky as this poor Gentleman ? I
‘ protest I am more sorry on his Account than
‘ my own. You see, *Joseph*, how this good-
‘ natur’d Man is treated by his Servants ; one
‘ locks up his Linnen, another physicks his Hor-
‘ ses ; and I suppose by his being at this House
‘ last Night, the Butler had locked up his Cel-
‘ lar. Bless us ! how Good-nature is used in this
‘ World ! I protest I am more concerned on his
‘ Account than my own.’ ‘ So am not I,’ cries
Joseph ; ‘ not that I am much troubled about
‘ walking on foot ; all my Concern is, how we
‘ shall get out of the House ; unless God sends
‘ another Pedlar to redeem us. But certainly,
‘ this Gentleman has such an Affection for you,
‘ that he would lend you a larger Sum than we
‘ owe here ; which is not above four or five
‘ Shillings.’ ‘ Very true, Child,’ answered *A-*
dams ; ‘ I will write a Letter to him, and will
‘ even venture to solicit him for three Half-
‘ Crowns ; there will be no harm in having two
‘ or three Shillings in our Pockets ; as we have
‘ full forty Miles to travel, we may possibly have
‘ occasion for them.’

Fanny being now risen, *Joseph* paid her a Vi-
sit, and left *Adams* to write his Letter, which
having finished, he dispatched a Boy with it to
the Gentleman, and then seated himself by the
Door, lighted his Pipe, and betook himself to
Meditation.

The Boy staying longer than seemed to be ne-
cessary, *Joseph*, who with *Fanny* was now returned
to the Parson, expressed some Apprehensions, that
the Gentleman’s Steward had locked up his Purse
too. To which *Adams* answered, ‘ It might very
‘ possibly be ; and he should wonder at no Li-
‘ berties,

‘berties, which the Devil might put into the
 ‘Head of a wicked Servant to take with so wor-
 ‘thy a Master:’ but added, ‘that as the Sum
 ‘was so small, so noble a Gentleman would be
 ‘easily able to procure it in the Parish; tho’
 ‘he had it not in his own Pocket. Indeed,’
 says he, ‘if it was four or five Guineas, or any
 ‘such large Quantity of Money, it might be a
 ‘different Matter.’

They were now sat down to Breakfast over
 some Toast and Ale, when the Boy returned, and
 informed them, that the Gentleman was not at
 home. ‘Very well!’ cries *Adams*; ‘but why,
 ‘Child, did you not stay ’till his Return? Go
 ‘back again, my good Boy, and wait for his
 ‘coming home: he cannot be gone far, as his
 ‘Horses are all sick; and besides he had no In-
 ‘tention to go abroad; for he invited us to spend
 ‘this Day and To-morrow at his House. There-
 ‘fore go back, Child, and tarry ’till his return
 ‘home.’ The Messenger departed, and was back
 again with great Expedition; bringing an Ac-
 count, that the Gentleman was gone a long Jour-
 ney, and would not be at home again this Month.
 At these Words *Adams* seemed greatly confound-
 ed, saying, ‘This must be a sudden Accident,
 ‘as the Sicknes or Death of a Relation, or some
 ‘such unforeseen Misfortune;’ and then turning
 to *Joseph*, cried, ‘I wish you had reminded me
 ‘to have borrowed this Money last Night.’ *Jo-
 seph* smiling, answered, ‘he was very much de-
 ‘ceived, if the Gentleman would not have found
 ‘some Excuse to avoid lending it. I own,’ says
 he, ‘I was never much pleased with his profes-
 ‘sing so much Kindness for you at first sight:
 ‘for I have heard the Gentlemen of our Cloth
 ‘in

‘ in *London* tell many such Stories of their Masters. But when the Boy brought the Message back of his not being at home, I presently knew what would follow ; for whenever a Man of Fashion doth not care to fulfil his Promises, the Custom is, to order his Servants that he will never be at home to the Person so promised. In *London* they call it *denying him*. I have myself denied Sir *Thomas Booby* above a hundred times ; and when the Man hath danced Attendance for about a Month, or sometimes longer, he is acquainted in the end, that the Gentleman is gone out of Town, and could do nothing in the Business.’ ‘ Good Lord ! ’ says *Adams*, ‘ what Wickedness is there in the Christian World ? I profess almost equal to what I have read of the *Heathens*. But surely, *Joseph*, your Suspicions of this Gentleman must be unjust ; for, what a silly Fellow must he be, who would do the Devil’s Work for nothing ? and canst thou tell me any Interest he could possibly propose to himself by deceiving us in his Professions ? ’ ‘ It is not for me,’ answered *Joseph*, ‘ to give Reasons for what Men do, to a Gentleman of your Learning.’ ‘ You say right,’ quoth *Adams* ; ‘ Knowledge of Men is only to be learnt from Books ; *Plato* and *Seneca* for that ; and those are Authors, I am afraid, Child, you never read.’ ‘ Not I, Sir, truly,’ answered *Joseph* ; ‘ all I know is, it is a Maxim among the Gentlemen of our Cloth that those Masters who promise the most, perform the least ; and I have often heard them say, they have found the largest Vails in those Families where they were not promised any. But, Sir, instead of considering any farther these
‘ Matters,

‘ Matters, it would be our wisest way to contrive some Method of getting out of this House: for the generous Gentleman, instead of doing us any Service, hath left us the whole Reckoning to pay.’ *Adams* was going to answer, when their Host came in, and, with a kind of jeering Smile, said, ‘ Well, Masters! the Squire hath not sent his Horses for you yet. Laud help me! how easily some Folks make Promises!’ ‘ How!’ says *Adams*, ‘ have you ever known him do any thing of this kind before?’ ‘ Ay marry have I,’ answered the Host; ‘ it is no Business of mine, you know, Sir, to say any thing to a Gentleman to his Face: but now he is not here, I will assure you, he hath not his Fellow within the three next Market-Towns. I own, I could not help laughing, when I heard him offer you the Living; for thereby hangs a good Jest. I thought he would have offered you my House next; for one is no more his to dispose of than the other.’ At these Words, *Adams* blessing himself declared, ‘ he had never read of such a Monster; but what vexes me most,’ says he, ‘ is, that he hath decoyed us into running up a long Debt with you, which we are not able to pay; for we have no Money about us; and, what is worse, live at such a Distance, that if you should trust us, I am afraid you would lose your Money, for want of our finding any Conveniency of sending it.’ ‘ Trust you, Master!’ says the Host, ‘ that I will with all my heart; I honour the Clergy too much to deny trusting one of them for such a Trifle; besides, I like your fear of never paying me. I have lost many a Debt in my Life-time; but

‘ was promised to be paid them all in a very short
‘ time. I will score this Reckoning for the No-
‘ velty of it. It is the first I do assure you of
‘ its kind. But what say you, Master, shall we
‘ have t’other Pot before we part? It will waste
‘ but a little Chalk more; and if you never pay
‘ me a Shilling, the Loss will not ruin me.’ *Adams* liked the Invitation very well; especially as it was delivered with so hearty an Accent.—He shook his Host by the Hand, and, thanking him, said, ‘ he would tarry another Pot, rather for
‘ the Pleasure of such worthy Company, than for
‘ the Liquor;’ adding, ‘ he was glad to find
‘ some Christians left in the Kingdom; for that
‘ he almost began to suspect that he was sojourn-
‘ ing in a Country inhabited only by *Jews* and
‘ *Turks*.’

The kind Host produced the Liquor, and *Joseph* with *Fanny* retired into the Garden; where while they solaced themselves with amorous Discourse, *Adams* sat down with his Host; and both filling their Glasses, and lighting their Pipes, they began that Dialogue which the Reader will find in the next Chapter.

CHAP. XVII.

A Dialogue between Mr. Abraham Adams and his Host, which, by the Disagreement in their Opinions, seemed to threaten an unlucky Catastrophe, had it not been timely prevented by the Return of the Lovers.

‘SIR,’ said the Host, ‘I assure you, you are
‘not the first to whom our Squire hath promised more than he hath performed. He is so
‘famous for this Practice, that his Word will
‘not be taken for much by those who know him.
‘I remember a young Fellow whom he promised
‘his Parents to make an Exciseman. The poor
‘People, who could ill afford it, bred their Son
‘to Writing and Accounts, and other Learning,
‘to qualify him for the Place; and the Boy held
‘up his Head above his Condition with these
‘Hopes; nor would he go to Plough, nor to any
‘other kind of Work; and went constantly drest
‘as fine as could be, with two clean *Holland*
‘Shirts a Week, and this for several Years; ’till
‘at last he followed the Squire up to *London*,
‘thinking there to mind him of his Promises:
‘but he could never get sight of him. So that
‘being out of Money and Business, he fell into
‘evil Company, and wicked Courses; and in the
‘end came to a Sentence of Transportation, the
‘News of which broke the Mother’s Heart. I
‘will tell you another true Story of him: There
‘was a Neighbour of mine, a Farmer, who had
‘two Sons whom he bred up to the Business.

‘ Pretty Lads they were ; nothing would serve
‘ the Squire, but that the youngest must be made
‘ a Parson. Upon which he perswaded the Fa-
‘ ther to send him to School, promising, that he
‘ would afterwards maintain him at the Univer-
‘ sity ; and when he was of a proper Age, give
‘ him a Living. But after the Lad had been se-
‘ ven Years at School, and his Father brought
‘ him to the Squire with a Letter from his Ma-
‘ ster, that he was fit for the University ; the
‘ Squire, instead of minding his Promise, or
‘ sending him thither at his Expence, only told
‘ his Father, that the young Man was a fine Scho-
‘ lar ; and it was Pity he could not afford to keep
‘ him at *Oxford* for four or five Years more, by
‘ which Time, if he could get him a Curacy,
‘ he might have him ordained.’ The Farmer
said, ‘ he was not a Man sufficient to do any
‘ such thing.’ ‘ Why then,’ answered the
Squire, ‘ I am very sorry you have given him so
‘ much Learning ; for if he cannot get his living
‘ by that, it will rather spoil him for any thing
‘ else ; and your other Son, who can hardly
‘ write his Name, will do more at plowing and
‘ sowing, and is in a better Condition than he :
‘ and indeed so it proved ; for the poor Lad, not
‘ finding Friends to maintain him in his Learning
‘ as he had expected, and being unwilling to
‘ work, fell to drinking, though he was a very
‘ sober Lad before ; and in a short time, partly
‘ with Grief, and partly with good Liquor, fell
‘ into a Consumption and died. Nay, I can tell
‘ you more still : There was another, a young
‘ Woman, and the handsomest in all this Neigh-
‘ bourhood, whom he enticed up to *London*, pro-
‘ mising to make her a Gentlewoman to one of
‘ your

‘ your Women of Quality : but instead of keep-
 ‘ ing his Word, we have since heard, after hav-
 ‘ ing a Child by her himself, she became a com-
 ‘ mon Whore ; then kept a Coffee-House in *Co-*
 ‘ *vent-Garden*, and a little after died of the
 ‘ *French* Distemper in a Goal. I could tell you
 ‘ many more Stories : but how do you imagine
 ‘ he served me myself ? You must know, Sir, I
 ‘ was bred a Sea-faring Man, and have been
 ‘ many Voyages ; ’till at last I came to be Ma-
 ‘ ster of a Ship myself, and was in a fair Way
 ‘ of making a Fortune, when I was attacked by
 ‘ one of those cursed *Guarda-Costas*, who took
 ‘ our Ships before the beginning of the War ;
 ‘ and after a Fight, wherein I lost the greater
 ‘ part of my Crew, my Rigging being all demo-
 ‘ lished, and two Shots received between Wind
 ‘ and Water, I was forced to strike. The Vil-
 ‘ lains carried off my Ship, a Brigantine of 150
 ‘ Tons, a pretty Creature she was, and put me,
 ‘ a Man, and a Boy, into a little bad Pink, in
 ‘ which, with much ado, we at last made *Fal-*
 ‘ *mouth* ; tho’ I believe the *Spaniards* did not
 ‘ imagine she could possibly live a Day at Sea,
 ‘ Upon my return hither, where my Wife, who
 ‘ was of this Country, then lived, the Squire
 ‘ told me, he was so pleased with the Defence
 ‘ I had made against the Enemy, that he did not
 ‘ fear getting me promoted to a Lieutenancy
 ‘ of a Man of War, if I would accept of it ;
 ‘ which I thankfully assured him I would. Well,
 ‘ Sir, two or three Years past, during which I
 ‘ had many repeated Promises, not only from the
 ‘ Squire, but (as he told me) from the Lords of
 ‘ the Admiralty. He never returned from *Lon-*
 ‘ *don*, but I was assured I might be satisfied now,

‘ for I was certain of the first Vacancy ; and
‘ what surprizes me still, when I reflect on it,
‘ these Assurances were given me with no less
‘ Confidence, after so many Disappointments,
‘ than at first. At last, Sir, growing weary,
‘ and somewhat suspicious after so much Delay,
‘ I wrote to a Friend in *London*, who I knew
‘ had some Acquaintance at the best House in the
‘ Admiralty, and desired him to back the Squire’s
‘ Interest: for indeed I feared he had solicited
‘ the Affair with more Coldness than he pretend-
‘ ed.—And what Answer do you think my Friend
‘ sent me?—Truly, Sir, he acquainted me, that
‘ the Squire had never mentioned my Name at
‘ the Admiralty in his Life ; and unless I had
‘ much faithfuller Interest, advised me to give
‘ over my Pretensions, which I immediately did ;
‘ and, with the Concurrence of my Wife, re-
‘ solved to set up an Alehouse, where you are
‘ heartily welcome : and so my Service to you ;
‘ and may the Squire, and all such sneaking Ras-
‘ cals, go to the Devil together.’ ‘ Oh fie !’
says *Adams* ; ‘ Oh fie ! He is indeed a wicked
‘ Man ; but G— will, I hope, turn his Heart to
‘ Repentance. Nay, if he could but once see
‘ the Meanness of this detestable Vice ; would
‘ he but once reflect that he is one of the most
‘ scandalous as well as pernicious Lyars ; sure he
‘ must despise himself to so intolerable a Degree,
‘ that it would be impossible for him to continue
‘ a Moment in such a Course. And, to confess
‘ the Truth, notwithstanding the Baseness of this
‘ Character, which he hath too well deserved,
‘ he hath in his Countenance sufficient Symptoms
‘ of that *bona Indoles*, that Sweetness of Disposi-
‘ tion which furnishes out a good Christian.’

‘ Ah ! Master, Master,’ (says the Host) ‘ if you
 ‘ had travelled as far as I have, and conversed
 ‘ with the many Nations where I have traded,
 ‘ you would not give any Credit to a Man’s
 ‘ Countenance. Symptoms in his Countenance,
 ‘ quotha !’ ‘ I would look there perhaps to see
 ‘ whether a Man had had the Small-Pox, but for
 ‘ nothing else !’ He spoke this with so little Re-
 gard to the Parson’s Observation, that it a good
 deal nettled him ; and, taking the Pipe hastily
 from his Mouth, he thus answered : ‘ Master of
 ‘ mine, perhaps I have travelled a great deal far-
 ‘ ther than you without the Assistance of a Ship.
 ‘ Do you imagine sailing by different Cities or
 ‘ Countries is travelling ? No.

Cælum non Animum mutant qui trans mare currunt.

‘ I can go farther in an Afrernoon than you in a
 ‘ Twelve-month. What, I suppose you have
 ‘ seen the Pillars of *Hercules*, and perhaps the
 ‘ Walls of *Carthage*. Nay, you may have heard
 ‘ *Scylla*, and seen *Charybdis* ; you may have en-
 ‘ tered the Closet where *Archimedes* was found at
 ‘ the taking *Syracuse*. I suppose you have sailed
 ‘ among the *Cyclades*, and passed the famous
 ‘ Streights which take their Name from the un-
 ‘ fortunate *Helle*, whose Fate is sweetly described
 ‘ by *Apollonius Rhodius* ; you have passed the very
 ‘ Spot, I conceive, where *Dædalus* fell into that
 ‘ Sea, his waxen Wings being melted by the
 ‘ Sun ; you have traversed the *Euxine* Sea, I
 ‘ make no doubt ; nay, you may have been on
 ‘ the Banks of the *Caspian*, and called at *Colchis*,
 ‘ to see if there is ever another Golden Fleece.’—
 ‘ Not I truly, Master,’ answered the Host, ‘ I
 ‘ never

‘ never touched at any of these Places.’ ‘ But I have been at all these,’ replied *Adams*. ‘ Then I suppose,’ cries the Host, ‘ you have been at the *East Indies*; for there are no such, I will be sworn, either in the *West* or the *Levant*.’ ‘ Pray where’s the *Levant*?’ quoth *Adams*, ‘ that should be in the *East Indies* by right.’— ‘ O ho! you are a pretty Traveller,’ cries the Host, ‘ and not know the *Levant*. My service to you, Master; you must not talk of these Things with me! you must not tip us the Traveller; it won’t go here.’ ‘ Since thou art so dull to misunderstand me still,’ quoth *Adams*, ‘ I will inform thee; the travelling I mean is in Books, the only way of travelling by which any Knowledge is to be acquired. From them I learn what I asserted just now, that Nature generally imprints such a Portraiture of the Mind in the Countenance, that a skilful Physiognomist will rarely be deceived. I presume you have never read the Story of *Socrates* to this Purpose, and therefore I will tell it you. A certain Physiognomist asserted of *Socrates*, that he plainly discovered by his Features that he was a Rogue in his Nature. A Character so contrary to the Tenour of all this great Man’s Actions, and the generally received Opinion concerning him, incensed the Boys of *Athens* so, that they threw Stones at the Physiognomist, and would have demolished him for his Ignorance, had not *Socrates* himself prevented them by confessing the Truth of his Observations, and acknowledging, that tho’ he corrected his Disposition by Philosophy, he was indeed naturally as inclined to Vice as had been predicated of him. Now, pray resolve me,— How should a Man know
‘ this

‘ this Story, if he had not read it ? ’ ‘ Well Ma-
 ‘ ster,’ said the Host, ‘ and what signifies it whe-
 ‘ ther a Man knows it or no ? He who goes a-
 ‘ broad as I have done, will always have Oppor-
 ‘ tunities enough of knowing the World, with-
 ‘ out troubling his Head with *Socrates*, or any such
 ‘ Fellows.’ — ‘ Friend,’ cries *Adams*, ‘ if a Man
 ‘ should sail round the World, and anchor in
 ‘ every Harbour of it, without Learning, he
 ‘ would return home as ignorant as he went out.’
 ‘ Lord help you,’ answered the Host, ‘ there
 ‘ was my Boatswain, poor Fellow ! he could
 ‘ scarce either write or read, and yet he would
 ‘ navigate a Ship with any Master of a Man of
 ‘ War ; and a very pretty Knowledge of Trade
 ‘ he had too.’ ‘ Trade,’ answered *Adams*, ‘ as
 ‘ *Aristotle* proves in his first Chapter of Politics,
 ‘ is below a Philosopher, and unnatural as it is
 ‘ managed now.’ The Host look’d stedfastly at
Adams, and after a Minute’s Silence asked him,
 ‘ if he was one of the Writers of the *Gazet-*
 ‘ *teers* ? for I have heard,’ says he, ‘ they are
 ‘ writ by Parsons.’ ‘ *Gazetteers* !’ answered *A-*
dams, ‘ What is that ? ’ ‘ It is a dirty News-
 ‘ Paper,’ replied the Host, ‘ which hath been
 ‘ given away all over the Nation for these many
 ‘ Years, to abuse Trade and honest Men, which
 ‘ I would not suffer to lye on my Table, tho’
 ‘ it hath been offered me for nothing.’ ‘ Not
 ‘ I truly,’ said *Adams*, ‘ I never write any thing
 ‘ but Sermons ; and I assure you I am no Enemy
 ‘ to Trade, whilst it is consistent with Honesty ;
 ‘ nay, I have always looked on the Tradesman
 ‘ as a very valuable Member of Society, and
 ‘ perhaps inferior to none but the Man of Learn-
 ‘ ing.’ ‘ No, I believe he is not, nor to him
 ‘ neither,’

‘neither,’ answered the Host. ‘Of what use
‘would Learning be in a Country without
‘Trade! What would all you Parsons do to
‘clothe your Backs and feed your Bellies? Who
‘fetches you your Silks and your Linens, and
‘your Wines, and all the other Necessaries of
‘Life? I speak chiefly with regard to the Sail-
‘ors.’ ‘You should say the Extravagancies of
‘Life,’ replied the Parson; ‘but admit they
‘were the Necessaries, there is something more
‘necessary than Life itself, which is provided
‘by Learning; I mean the Learning of the
‘Clergy. Who clothes you with Piety, Meek-
‘ness, Humility, Charity, Patience, and all the
‘other Christian Virtues? Who feeds your Souls
‘with the Milk of brotherly Love, and diets
‘them with all the dainty Food of Holiness,
‘which at once cleanses them of all impure car-
‘nal Affections, and fattens them with the truly
‘rich Spirit of Grace?—Who doth this?’ ‘Ay,
‘who indeed!’ cries the Host; ‘for I do not
‘remember ever to have seen any such Clothing or
‘such Feeding. And so in the mean time, Master,
‘my service to you.’ *Adams* was going to an-
swer with some Severity, when *Joseph* and *Fan-
ny* returned, and pressed his Departure so ea-
gerly, that he would not refuse them; and so,
grasping his Crabstick, he took leave of his Host,
(neither of them being so well pleased with each
other as they had been at their first sitting down
together) and with *Joseph* and *Fanny*, who both
expressed much Impatience, departed, and now
all together renewed their Journey.

The End of the First Volume.

1 MA 66

B O O K S printed for A. MILLAR.

1. **T**HE WORKS of Mr. THOMSON, in 2 vols. with Cuts. Containing the *Seasons*, a *Hymn*, a Poem to the Memory of Sir *Isaac Newton*, *Britannia*, a Poem, and *Sophonisba* a Tragedy. Vol. II. Ancient and Modern *Italy* compared; *Greece*, *Rome*, *Britain*, and the *Prospect*, being the Five Parts of *Liberty*, a Poem; *Agamemnon*, and *Edward and Eleonora*, Tragedies; and a Poem to the Memory of the late Lord Chancellor *Talbot*. N. B. The second Volume may be had separate, and most of the Pieces.

2. The *Seasons*, in a Pocket Edition.

3. TANCRED and SIGISMUNDA, a Tragedy. As it is acted at the Theatre in *Drury-Lane*. By Mr. THOMSON.

4. The *Castle of Indolence*; an *Allegorical Poem*. In Two Cantos. By J. THOMSON.

4. The LIFE of FRANCIS BACON, Baron of *Vermulham*, Viscount *St. Alban*, and Lord High Chancellor of *England*. In this Work, besides an accurate Review of the Reigns of Queen *Elizabeth* and King *James I.* the Characters of the most eminent Persons that flourished under both those Princes, are occasionally drawn. By Mr. MALLET.

6. The OECONOMY of LOVE. A New Edition.

7. The TEA-TABLE MISCELLANY: OR, A Collection of *Scots* and *English* Songs, 4 vol.—N. B. The 4th Volume is to be had alone, to compleat the Sets of such as bought the 3 vols.

8. The GENTLE SHEPHERD. A *Scots* Pastoral Comedy.

The above Two published by ALLAN RAMSAY.

9. The Art of preserving Health: A Poem. In Four Books. 1. *Air*. 2. *Diet*. 3. *Exercise*. 4. *The Passions*. By JOHN ARMSTRONG, M. D. The Second Edition.

10. MISCELLANIES. By HENRY FIELDING, Esq; In 3 Vols. Containing, Vol. I. All his Works in Verse, and some short Essays in Prose. Vol. II. A Journey from this World to the next, &c. Vol. III. The History of that Renowned Person *Jonathan Wild*, Esq;

B O O K S printed for A. MILLAR.

Esq; in which not only his Character, but that of divers other *great Personages* of his Time, are set in a just and true Light.

11. **THE ADVENTURES OF DAVID SIMPLE :** Containing an Account of his Travels through the Cities of *London* and *Westminster*, in the Search of a **REAL FRIEND.** By a **LADY.** **THE SECOND EDITION,** *Revised and Corrected*, with Alterations and Additions; and a Preface by *Henry Fielding, Esq;* 2 Vols.

12. **FAMILIAR LETTERS** between the Principal Characters in *David Simple*, and some others. To which is added, **A VISION.** In 2 Vols. 8vo.

13. **LEONORA :** Or, *Characters drawn from Real Life.* Containing a great Variety of Incidents, Interspersed with Reflections Moral and Entertaining. The Second Edition. 2 Vols.

14. **THE LADY'S DRAWING ROOM.** Being a faithful Picture of the Great World. In which the various Humours of both Sexes are Display'd. *Drawn from the Life :* and interspersed with entertaining and affecting Novels.

15. **THE SECRET HISTORY OF PERSIA.,** Containing a particular Account, not only of that Kingdom, but also of the most considerable **STATES** of **ASIA ;** with the *Characters* of their Princes, and other Persons distinguished by their Birth, Rank, Qualities or Employments. Translated from the *French Original.* With a **KEY,** and some *Explanatory Notes.*

16. **A POETICAL TRANSLATION** of the **WORKS** of **HORACE :** With the **ORIGINAL TEXT,** and **NOTES** collected from the best *Latin* and *French* Commentators on that Author. By the *Rev. Mr. Philip Francis,* Rector of *Skeyton* in *Norfolk.* The Second Edition, in 4 Vols.